

# Semiparametric Conditional Factor Models: Estimation and Inference\*

Qihui Chen<sup>†</sup>      Nikolai Roussanov<sup>‡</sup>      Xiaoliang Wang<sup>§</sup>  
CUHK-Shenzhen      The Wharton School      UPenn

July 18, 2022

## Abstract

This paper introduces a simple and tractable sieve estimation of semiparametric conditional factor models with latent factors. We establish large- $N$ -asymptotic properties of the estimators and test statistics without requiring large  $T$ . We also develop a simple bootstrap procedure for conducting inference about the conditional pricing errors as well as the shapes of the factor loading functions. These results enable us to estimate conditional factor structure of a large set of individual assets by utilizing arbitrary nonlinear functions of a number of characteristics without the need to pre-specify the factors, while allowing us to disentangle the characteristics' role in capturing factor betas from alphas (i.e., undiversifiable risk from mispricing). We apply these methods to the cross-section of individual U.S. stock returns and find strong evidence of large nonzero pricing errors that combine to produce arbitrage portfolios with Sharpe ratios above 3.

**KEYWORDS:** Characteristics, managed portfolios, factor models, PCA, sieve estimation, conditional moments, nonparametric estimation, strong approximation

---

\*We thank Xu Cheng, Yuan Liao, Hao Ma (discussant), Seth Pruitt (discussant), Frank Schorfheide, Liangjun Su and Linyan Zhu (discussant) as well as conference audiences and seminar participants at University of Lausanne (Swiss Finance Institute), University of Pennsylvania, Shanghai University of Finance and Economics, Xiamen University, 2021 Annual Meeting of Young Econometricians in Asia-Pacific Region, 2022 SFS Cavalcade, 2022 WFA, and 2022 CICF for helpful discussions and comments.

<sup>†</sup>School of Management and Economics and Shenzhen Finance Institute, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, Shenzhen (CUHK-Shenzhen); qihuichen@cuhk.edu.cn

<sup>‡</sup>The Wharton School, University of Pennsylvania and NBER; nroussan@wharton.upenn.edu

<sup>§</sup>Department of Economics, University of Pennsylvania; xlwang@sas.upenn.edu

# 1 Introduction

We consider the following semiparametric factor model

$$y_{it} = \alpha(z_{it}) + \beta(z_{it})' f_t + \varepsilon_{it}, i = 1, \dots, N, t = 1, \dots, T, \quad (1)$$

where  $f_t$  is a  $K \times 1$  vector of unobserved factors,  $\beta(\cdot)$  is a  $K \times 1$  vector of unknown factor loading functions,  $\alpha(\cdot)$  is an unknown intercept function,  $\varepsilon_{it}$  is the idiosyncratic component that cannot be explained by the common component, and  $y_{it}$  and  $z_{it}$ —an  $M \times 1$  vector of covariates—are observed. Our main focus is on cross-sectional asset pricing, where  $y_{it}$  are asset return realizations while  $z_{it}$  are pre-specified asset characteristics (i.e. they are known at the beginning of period  $t$ ).<sup>1</sup> In this case (1) describes a *conditional* factor model, in the sense that it captures time-variation in asset return exposures to the common factors (i.e.,  $\beta(z_{it})$ ) as well as the pricing errors (i.e.,  $\alpha(z_{it})$ ), which are both functions of characteristics (i.e.,  $z_{it}$ ). As emphasized by [Cochrane \(2011\)](#), this model is central to empirical asset pricing, since it potentially allows for distinguishing between “risk” and “mispricing” explanations of the role of characteristics in predicting asset returns.<sup>2</sup> Pooling the information in a multitude of stock characteristics and summarizing the common variation using a small number of factors would amount to “taming the zoo” of factors that proliferate in empirical asset pricing. The challenge to doing so is threefold: first, the identities of the common factors  $f_t$  are unknown since the factors are latent; second, the functional forms of the *alpha* and *beta* functions are also generally unknown; finally, the cross-sectional dimension  $N$  is typically much larger than the sample time-series length  $T$ , which renders standard tools of factor analysis inapplicable, especially when conditional covariances are time-varying.

We introduce a simple and tractable estimation method to recover both the la-

---

<sup>1</sup>Other potential applications include modelling the implied volatility of options ([Park et al., 2009](#)) and describing consumer demand system ([Lewbel, 1991](#)), among others.

<sup>2</sup>While useful, it might not be sufficient to resolve the debate, since distinguishing between the different explanations requires understanding the economic nature of the latent factors - e.g., see [Kozak et al. \(2018\)](#).

tent factors and the functional parameters of the model, as well as develop formal inference procedures. First, we develop an easy-to-compute estimator for  $\alpha(\cdot)$ ,  $\beta(\cdot)$  and  $f_t$  based on a sieve approximation to the nonparametric functions  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . The estimators can be easily obtained by first running the regression of  $y_{it}$  on sieves of  $z_{it}$  for each  $t$  and then applying principal component analysis (PCA) to the estimated coefficient matrix. Throughout the paper, we refer to the two-step procedure as *the regressed-PCA*. The first step of our procedure is a cross-sectional regression (Fama and MacBeth, 1973). Thus, in asset pricing settings the regressed-PCA boils down to applying PCA to a relatively small set of characteristic-managed portfolios constructed via the Fama-MacBeth regressions. Second, we establish large sample properties of the estimators including consistency, rate of convergence, and asymptotic normality under mild conditions. In particular, we establish a strong approximation for the distribution of the estimator of the large dimensional coefficient matrix in the sieve approximation of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . These asymptotic results have several attractive properties: (i) they do not require large  $T$ ; (ii) they allow  $z_{it}$  to vary over time in a potentially non-stationary manner; (iii) they are applicable to unbalanced panels (which is useful since individual securities have varying life spans). Third, we provide two consistent estimators for the number of factors  $K$ , which are also easy to compute. This enables us to conduct the regressed-PCA without specifying the number of factors *a priori*.

In asset pricing, testing the restriction that  $\alpha(\cdot)$  is equal to zero for a given set of factors  $f_t$  is central for evaluating and comparing factor models. We show that linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  that are widely used in existing literature may adversely influence estimation of  $f_t$  when the true underlying functional relationships are nonlinear. Therefore, along with the flexible nonparametric estimators we provide specification tests for the shape of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  functions. We develop a simple bootstrap inference procedure for testing significance of pricing error  $\alpha(\cdot)$  as well as for linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . First, we propose a weighted bootstrap procedure to approximate the distribution of the estimator of the large-dimensional coefficient matrix in the sieve approximation of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  as well as construct a Wald-type test for examining the significance of  $\alpha(\cdot)$ . The main challenge to

developing a valid bootstrap is that the asymptotic distribution usually involves a rotational transformation matrix, which could be different under the bootstrap distribution, invalidating the procedure. In order to solve this problem we enforce the same factor estimator in the bootstrap samples as in the actual data. Second, we develop a likelihood ratio-type test for examining the linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . Specifically, we construct the test statistic by comparing estimators under the null hypothesis and the alternative hypothesis. The novelty of our construction is that we use the unrestricted factor estimator from the alternative to obtain the estimators of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  under the null. This ensures the same rotational transformation matrix under the null and the alternative and thus the consistency of our test. Both of these tests also enjoy the aforementioned attractive features of our estimators: our Monte Carlo simulations show that the finite sample performance of our estimators and tests is satisfactory and encouraging for large  $N$ , even when  $T$  is small.

We apply our new methodology to analyze the cross section of individual stock returns in the US market. We use the same data set as in [Kelly et al. \(2019\)](#), which is the closest study to ours in terms of its empirical aims, although both our econometric approach and empirical findings are quite different. First, in contrast to [Kelly et al. \(2019, 2020\)](#) we allow for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  functions to be non-linear. In fact, we are able to test—and reject—the validity of the linear specifications. Second, we are able to conduct rolling small sub-sample analyses to accommodate changing factor dynamics as our methods do not require large sample length  $T$ . Third, we are able to consistently estimate the number of latent factors. Our empirical findings reveal that only one latent factor is detected by the formal tests when we consider linear dependence of *alpha* and *beta* functions on characteristics, and two factors when we allow for nonlinearity—this is also in contrast to [Kelly et al. \(2019\)](#), who advocate a five-factor model. Still, our tests reject the risk-based model, since the pricing errors associated with many characteristics are statistically different from zero. Their economic magnitudes are also substantial, as we are able to construct pure-*alpha* arbitrage portfolios with annualized Sharpe ratios typically above 3. These Sharpe ratios tend to rise with the number of factors (we consider up to ten), indicating that adding factors does not improve the asset pricing prop-

erties of the model, even though it might help capture more time-series variation in returns. This result provides strong empirical evidence that the characteristics contain information about both risk exposures and mispricing. In addition, the nonlinear models often produce more reasonable estimated relationships between the risk exposures and characteristics than the linear model. For instance, the estimates from our nonlinear models show that firms with higher book-to-market ratios bear more systematic risk and hence have higher expected returns, whereas the estimates from the linear model often give the opposite result. Nevertheless, the additional flexibility provided by the nonparametric estimation of factor loadings does not result in an improved asset pricing performance of the factor models, yielding arbitrage portfolio Sharpe ratios that are as high or even higher than in the linear case, often exceeding 4.

Our paper relates to several strands of literature. Several studies estimate models similar to (1) under the assumption that  $z_{it}$  are time-invariant, at least over subsamples. Connor and Linton (2007) and Connor et al. (2012) develop estimation procedures based on kernel smoothing for the case with  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  being univariate functions. Fan et al. (2016a) consider a sieve estimation which facilitates global inference, and propose a projected-PCA approach for the case with  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ . Kim et al. (2020) extend the projected-PCA to allow for nonzero  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , and use it to construct an arbitrage portfolio. We contribute to this literature by introducing a robust sieve estimation that allows  $z_{it}$  to vary over time and developing global inference for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . Despite some similarities, our regressed-PCA is genetically different from the projected-PCA. The regression in the former serves to extract  $z_{it}$  from the common component for a consistent estimation, whereas the projection in the latter serves to remove the noise part of the factor loadings for a more efficient estimation. Therefore, the projected-PCA may fail to obtain consistent estimators when  $z_{it}$  are time-varying. In contrast, our regressed-PCA is consistent even when  $z_{it}$  are nonstationary over time.

Our study also contributes to the literature on time-varying factor models. Motta et al. (2011) and Su and Wang (2017) consider the time-varying factor model with factor loadings being smooth functions of  $t/T$  and propose local ver-

sions of PCA based on kernel smoothing.<sup>3</sup> Pelger and Xiong (2021) assume that factor loadings are smooth functions of state variables and study a similar estimation procedure. Gagliardini and Ma (2019) study a time-varying factor model with no arbitrage and extract local factors from conditional variance matrices. However, none of them are directly suitable for testing asset pricing models, since they all impose  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ . Many empirical findings suggest that characteristics contain information about both pricing errors and risk exposures, which can be distinguished in our approach. There are numerous studies of conditional models with observed factors. For example, Gagliardini et al. (2016) specify factor loadings as linear functions of both time-varying characteristics and state variables in a model with  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ ; Gagliardini et al. (2020) provide a comprehensive review.

The literature on the cross section of asset returns is vast; here we focus on multi-factor models motivated by the arbitrage pricing theory of Ross (1976) and its generalizations (Chamberlain and Rothschild, 1982; Connor and Korajczyk, 1986, 1988; Reisman, 1992). Empirical analysis that exploits the ability of stock characteristics to predict asset returns typically follows either the portfolio-sorting approach (Fama and French, 1993; Daniel and Titman, 1997; Fama and French, 2015) or the characteristic-based approach (Rosenberg and McKibben, 1973; Jacobs and Levy, 1988; Lewellen, 2015; Green et al., 2017; Freyberger et al., 2020; Kirby, 2020; Giglio and Xiu, 2021). The importance of nonlinearity is highlighted by several empirical studies (Connor et al., 2012; Kirby, 2020), and has also been addressed by machine learning methods in recent studies (Gu et al., 2021; Chen et al., 2022).

The central issue with both of these approaches is that they are unable to distinguish between the two roles played by characteristics: capturing time-varying risk exposures and representing mispricing. We complement the literature by introducing a semiparametric time-varying characteristic-based factor model that provides a simple, tractable and robust method for estimation and inference. This new methodology enables us to estimate conditional (dynamic) behavior of a large

---

<sup>3</sup>There is a large literature on conditional models that considers time-varying factor loadings that are functions of aggregate variables rather than firm-specific characteristics, e.g. Ferson and Harvey (1999) use a linear formulation while Roussanov (2014) considers nonparametric kernel-based specifications.

set of individual assets from a number of characteristics exhibiting nonlinearity without the need to pre-specify factors, while allowing us to disentangle the risk and mispricing explanations, as least from the standpoint of arbitrage-based models.

The remainder of the paper is organized as follows. Section 2 introduces the estimation method—the regressed-PCA. Section 3 establishes large sample properties of the estimators, including consistency, rate of convergence, and asymptotic distribution. Section 4 introduces a weighted bootstrap and develops two tests. Section 5 provides two consistent estimators of the number of factors. Section 6 applies our new methodology to analyze the cross section of individual stock returns in the US market. Section 7 briefly concludes. Appendix A collects assumptions, while Appendix B provides proofs of the main results. The Online Appendix presents auxiliary results, simulation results, additional empirical results, and technical lemmas.

## 2 Estimation Method

We begin by introducing some notation that is used throughout the paper. For a symmetric matrix  $A$ , we denote its  $k$ th largest eigenvalue by  $\lambda_k(A)$ , and its smallest and largest eigenvalues by  $\lambda_{\min}(A)$  and  $\lambda_{\max}(A)$ . For a matrix  $A$ , we denote its operator norm by  $\|A\|_2$ , its Frobenius norm by  $\|A\|_F$ , and its vectorization by  $\text{vec}(A)$ . The Euclidian norm of a column vector  $x$  is denoted  $\|x\|$ . For matrices  $A$  and  $B$ , we use  $A \otimes B$  to denote their Kronecker product.

We first illustrate the idea behind our regressed-PCA method by assuming that  $\alpha(\cdot)$  is null and  $\beta(\cdot)$  is linear:  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  and  $\beta(z_{it}) = \Gamma' z_{it}$  for some  $M \times K$  matrix  $\Gamma$ . Let  $Y_t \equiv (y_{1t}, \dots, y_{Nt})'$ ,  $Z_t \equiv (z_{1t}, \dots, z_{Nt})'$ , and  $\varepsilon_t \equiv (\varepsilon_{1t}, \dots, \varepsilon_{Nt})'$ . Then we may write (1) in a matrix form

$$Y_t = Z_t \Gamma f_t + \varepsilon_t. \quad (2)$$

The main challenge of applying the standard PCA for estimating  $\Gamma$  and  $f_t$  is the presence of  $Z_t$  in the first term on the right-hand side of (2). To circumvent it,

we first regress  $Y_t$  on  $Z_t$ . Thus, we obtain

$$(Z_t'Z_t)^{-1}Z_t'Y_t = \Gamma f_t + (Z_t'Z_t)^{-1}Z_t'\varepsilon_t. \quad (3)$$

Heuristically, the variation of the common component  $Z_t\Gamma f_t$  over  $t$  has two sources:  $Z_t$  and  $f_t$ , and regressing  $Y_t$  on  $Z_t$  can easily isolate the two sources or extract  $Z_t$  from the common component. Given the factor structure on the right-hand side of (3), we may apply the standard PCA to the regressed data  $\{(Z_t'Z_t)^{-1}Z_t'Y_t\}_{t \leq T}$  to obtain estimators of  $\Gamma$  and  $f_t$ . We call the two-step procedure *the regressed-PCA*.

We next consider the general case with nonzero  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and address how to estimate  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot) = (\beta_1(\cdot), \dots, \beta_K(\cdot))'$  nonparametrically. To estimate  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta_k(\cdot)$  without the curse of dimensionality when  $z_{it}$  is multivariate, we assume  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta_k(\cdot)$  to be separable. Specifically, we assume that there are  $\{\alpha_m(\cdot)\}_{m \leq M}$  and  $\{\beta_{km}(\cdot)\}_{m \leq M}$  such that

$$\alpha(z_{it}) = \sum_{m=1}^M \alpha_m(z_{it,m}) \text{ and } \beta_k(z_{it}) = \sum_{m=1}^M \beta_{km}(z_{it,m}), \quad (4)$$

where  $z_{it,m}$  is the  $m$ th entry of  $z_{it}$ . To estimate  $\alpha_m(\cdot)$  and  $\beta_{km}(\cdot)$ , we adopt the sieve method. Let  $\{\phi_j(\cdot)\}_{j \geq 1}$  be a set of basis functions (e.g., B-spline, Fourier series, polynomials), which spans a dense linear space of the functional space for  $\alpha_m(\cdot)$  and  $\beta_{km}(\cdot)$ . Then we may write

$$\alpha_m(z_{it,m}) = \sum_{j=1}^J a_{m,j} \phi_j(z_{it,m}) + r_{m,J}(z_{it,m}), \quad (5)$$

$$\beta_{km}(z_{it,m}) = \sum_{j=1}^J b_{km,j} \phi_j(z_{it,m}) + \delta_{km,J}(z_{it,m}). \quad (6)$$

Here,  $\{a_{m,j}\}_{j \leq J}$  and  $\{b_{km,j}\}_{j \leq J}$  are the sieve coefficients;  $r_{m,J}(\cdot)$  and  $\delta_{km,J}(\cdot)$  are “remaining functions” representing the approximation errors;  $J$  denotes the sieve size. The basic assumption for the sieve method is that  $\sup_z |r_{m,J}(z)| \rightarrow 0$  and  $\sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)| \rightarrow 0$  as  $J \rightarrow \infty$ . Let  $\bar{\phi}(z_{it,m}) \equiv (\phi_1(z_{it,m}), \dots, \phi_J(z_{it,m}))'$ ,  $\phi(z_{it}) \equiv (\bar{\phi}(z_{it,1})', \dots, \bar{\phi}(z_{it,M})')'$ ,  $a \equiv (a_{1,1}, \dots, a_{1,J}, \dots, a_{M,1}, \dots, a_{M,J})'$  which is a  $JM \times 1$  vector of the sieve coefficients,  $b_k \equiv (b_{k1,1}, \dots, b_{k1,J}, \dots, b_{kM,1}, \dots, b_{kM,J})'$ , and



$B \equiv (b_1, \dots, b_K)$  which is a  $JM \times K$  matrix of the sieve coefficients. Let  $r(z_{it}) \equiv \sum_{m=1}^M r_{m,J}(z_{it,m})$  and  $\delta(z_{it}) \equiv (\sum_{m=1}^M \delta_{1m,J}(z_{it,m}), \dots, \sum_{m=1}^M \delta_{Km,J}(z_{it,m}))'$ . Then

$$\alpha(z_{it}) = a'\phi(z_{it}) + r(z_{it}) \text{ and } \beta(z_{it}) = B'\phi(z_{it}) + \delta(z_{it}). \quad (7)$$

Thus,  $\alpha(z_{it})$  and  $\beta(z_{it})$  can be well approximated by  $a'\phi(z_{it})$  and  $B'\phi(z_{it})$  under the basic sieve assumption, and estimating  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  reduces to estimating  $a$  and  $B$ .

We now introduce the estimation of  $a$ ,  $B$  and  $f_t$  based on the above sieve approximation in (7) by adapting the regressed-PCA. Let  $\Phi(Z_t) \equiv (\phi(z_{1t}), \dots, \phi(z_{Nt}))'$ ,  $R(Z_t) \equiv (r(z_{1t}), \dots, r(z_{Nt}))'$  and  $\Delta(Z_t) \equiv (\delta(z_{1t}), \dots, \delta(z_{Nt}))'$ . Using the sieve approximation in (7), we may write (1) in a matrix form

$$Y_t = \Phi(Z_t)a + \Phi(Z_t)Bf_t + R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t + \varepsilon_t. \quad (8)$$

Under the basic sieve assumption, the term " $R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t$ " is negligible, so the main challenge in applying standard PCA to estimate  $a$ ,  $B$  and  $f_t$  is the presence of  $\Phi(Z_t)$  in the first two terms on the right-hand side of (8). To solve this problem we regress  $Y_t$  on  $\Phi(Z_t)$  to obtain

$$\tilde{Y}_t = a + Bf_t + (\Phi(Z_t)'\Phi(Z_t))^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'(R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t + \varepsilon_t), \quad (9)$$

where  $\tilde{Y}_t = (\Phi(Z_t)'\Phi(Z_t))^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'Y_t$ . Thus, we may estimate  $a$ ,  $B$  and  $f_t$  as follows. First, since  $\tilde{Y}_t \approx a + Bf_t$ , we may remove  $a$  by subtracting  $\bar{\tilde{Y}} = \sum_{t=1}^T \tilde{Y}_t/T$  from  $\tilde{Y}_t$  and estimate  $B$  by applying the standard PCA to the demeaned  $\{\tilde{Y}_t - \bar{\tilde{Y}}\}_{t \leq T}$ . Second, for identification of  $a$  (and thus  $\alpha(\cdot)$ ), we assume  $a'B = 0$ . Since  $\bar{\tilde{Y}} \approx a + B\bar{f}$  where  $\bar{f} = \sum_{t=1}^T f_t/T$ , we may estimate  $a$  according to  $a \approx [I_{JM} - B(B'B)^{-1}B]\bar{\tilde{Y}}$ . Third, we may estimate  $f_t$  according to  $f_t \approx (B'B)^{-1}B'\tilde{Y}_t$ .

The estimators of  $a$ ,  $B$ ,  $\alpha(\cdot)$ ,  $\beta(\cdot)$  and  $F = (f_1, \dots, f_T)'$  are formally defined as follows. Denote the estimators by  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$ ,  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{F}$ . Let  $M_T \equiv I_T - 1_T 1_T'/T$ , where  $1_T$  denotes a  $T \times 1$  vector of ones. We use the following normalization:  $B'B = I_K$  and  $F'M_T F/T$  being diagonal with diagonal entries in descending order. Let  $\tilde{Y} \equiv (\tilde{Y}_1, \dots, \tilde{Y}_T)$ . Then the columns of  $\hat{B}$  are the eigenvectors corresponding

to the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of the  $JM \times JM$  matrix  $\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T$ ,  $\hat{a} = (I_{JM} - \hat{B}\hat{B}')\tilde{Y}$ , and

$$\hat{\alpha}(z) = \hat{a}'\phi(z), \hat{\beta}(z) = \hat{B}'\phi(z) \text{ and } \hat{F} = (\hat{f}_1, \dots, \hat{f}_T)' = \tilde{Y}'\hat{B}. \quad (10)$$

Here, we assume that  $K$ —the number of factors—is known, and conduct asymptotic analysis and develop inference method in Sections 3 and 4. In Section 5, we develop two consistent estimators of  $K$ , so all the results carry over to the unknown  $K$  case using a conditioning argument.

**Remark 2.1.** Our estimation procedure is applicable for unbalanced panels. The key step is to obtain  $\tilde{Y}_t$ . We may write  $\tilde{Y}_t = [\sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})']^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})y_{it}$ . In the presence of unbalanced panels, we may obtain  $\tilde{Y}_t$  by taking the two sums over  $i$ 's, for which both  $z_{it}$  and  $y_{it}$  are observed in time period  $t$ . This is equivalent to replacing missing data with zeros and proceeding as balanced panels. The asymptotic results established in the following sections continue to hold as  $\min_{t \leq T} N_t \rightarrow \infty$ , where  $N_t$  is the sample size in time period  $t$ .

**Remark 2.2.** The approximated model in (8) can be alternatively viewed as a panel data model with time-varying slope coefficients  $a + Bf_t$ , which exhibit a factor structure. The regressed-PCA first estimates the time-varying slope coefficients by period-by-period cross-sectional regressions, and then exploits the factor structure by using PCA. The period-by-period cross-sectional regressions are known as Fama-MacBeth regressions (Fama and MacBeth, 1973), which help transform the large unbalanced panel of noisy individual asset returns into a low-dimensional balanced panel of assets that are largely free of idiosyncratic noise,  $\tilde{Y}_t$ . In asset pricing applications,  $\tilde{Y}_t$  can be interpreted as the time  $t$  realization of returns on a set of  $JM$  managed portfolios. Thus, the regressed-PCA boils down to applying PCA to a set of characteristic-managed portfolios constructed via the Fama-MacBeth regressions that are free of idiosyncratic noise and have sufficiently low dimensionality for the standard PCA methods to be applicable. The  $\ell$ th entry of  $\tilde{Y}_t$  is a weighted average of asset returns with weights determined by the  $\ell$ th row of  $(\Phi(Z_t)'\Phi(Z_t))^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'$ , which is a standardized version of  $\Phi(Z_t)$ . If  $\Phi(Z_t)'\Phi(Z_t)$  is diagonal, the portfolios are normalized by the second moment of

$\Phi(Z_t)$ . If the polynomial basis functions are used,  $\Phi(Z_t)$  consists of powers of  $Z_t$ . This allows us to investigate nonlinearity of characteristics in pricing errors and risk exposures.

How does our regressed PCA compare with existing methods that have been proposed in the literature? First, consider the projected-PCA of [Fan et al. \(2016a\)](#), which applies the standard PCA to the projected data— $\{\Phi(Z_t)(\Phi(Z_t)'\Phi(Z_t))^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'Y_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . The regression in the regressed-PCA is designed to extract  $Z_t$  from the common component for a consistent estimation, whereas the projection in the projected-PCA is designed to remove the noise in the factor loadings for a more efficient estimation. Therefore, the projected-PCA may fail to provide consistent estimates when  $Z_t$  is time-varying. Indeed, as discussed in Appendix G of [Fan et al. \(2016b\)](#), one may need to impose certain smoothness conditions on  $Z_t$  over  $t$  to ensure the consistency of the projected-PCA; the regressed-PCA does not require such conditions (see below). Second, consider the least squares estimation approach ([Park et al., 2009](#)), which is at the core of the instrumented PCA (IPCA) of [Kelly et al. \(2019\)](#). The least squares estimation problem is nonconvex and thus cannot be solved explicitly; [Park et al. \(2009\)](#) develop a numerical algorithm to find the estimators, while [Kelly et al. \(2019\)](#) propose an alternating least squares procedure. However, both methods may require a good choice of initial values as convergence to the correct solution is not assured, and their asymptotic properties are not well-understood. In addition to the asymptotic properties that we derive, our estimators can always be explicitly solved for, and their computation is easy since it involves only regression and PCA.

### 3 Asymptotic Analysis

In this section we establish consistency of our estimators and provide their asymptotic distributions.

### 3.1 Consistency and Rate of Convergence

Prior to presenting formal theorems, we return to (2) to quickly illustrate why large  $T$  is not required and  $Z_t$  are allowed to be nonstationary over  $t$  in our asymptotic analysis. Assume  $T \geq K + 1$  and  $M \geq K$ . Since the columns of  $\hat{B}$  and  $\Gamma$  are the eigenvectors of  $\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'$  and  $\Gamma F'M_T F\Gamma'$  corresponding to the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues, by the matrix perturbation theorem (see, for example, [Yu et al. \(2014\)](#)), to establish the consistency of  $\hat{B}$  to  $\Gamma$  (up to a rotational transformation) it suffices to show

$$\|\tilde{Y}M_T - \Gamma F'M_T\|_F = o_p(1) \text{ as } N \rightarrow \infty. \quad (11)$$

Since  $\tilde{Y} = \Gamma F' + ((Z'_1 Z_1)^{-1} Z'_1 \varepsilon_1, \dots, (Z'_T Z_T)^{-1} Z'_T \varepsilon_T)$ , (11) reduces to

$$\|((Z'_1 Z_1)^{-1} Z'_1 \varepsilon_1, \dots, (Z'_T Z_T)^{-1} Z'_T \varepsilon_T)M_T\|_F = o_p(1) \text{ as } N \rightarrow \infty. \quad (12)$$

When  $T$  is fixed, (12) is equivalent to  $(Z'_t Z_t)^{-1} Z'_t \varepsilon_t = o_p(1)$  for each  $t$ . Thus, we only need regularity conditions on  $Z_t$  and  $\varepsilon_t$  for each  $t$  in order to apply the law of large numbers. This implies that  $Z_t$  can vary over  $t$  in a non-stationary manner.

Let  $H \equiv (F'M_T \hat{F})(\hat{F}'M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$ , which is a rotational transformation matrix that determines the convergence limit of  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$ . Let  $\xi_J \equiv \sup_z \|\bar{\phi}(z)\|$ , which is  $O(\sqrt{J})$  for B-spline and Fourier series and  $O(J)$  for polynomials (see, for example, [Belloni et al. \(2015\)](#)). The first theoretical result of the paper is given as follows. We collect all assumptions with discussions in [Appendix A](#).

**Theorem 3.1.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.5 hold. Let  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$ ,  $\hat{a}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  be given in (10). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned} \|\hat{a} - a\|^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right), \\ \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right), \\ \frac{1}{T}\|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{1}{N}\right), \end{aligned}$$

$$\sup_z |\hat{\alpha}(z) - \alpha(z)|^2 = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa-1}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J^2}{NT} \right) \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2,$$

$$\sup_z \|\hat{\beta}(z) - H'\beta(z)\|^2 = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa-1}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J^2}{NT} \right) \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2.$$

We discuss two important findings. First, Theorem 3.1 implies that  $a$  and  $\alpha(\cdot)$  can be consistently estimated by  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$ , and  $B$ ,  $F$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  can be consistently estimated by  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  up to a rotational transformation under either large  $N$  with fixed  $T$  or large  $N$  and large  $T$ . In particular, the consistency of  $\hat{F}$  requires  $J \rightarrow \infty$ . This is because a large sieve approximation error of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  may cause inconsistent estimation of  $F$ . To quickly see this, let us look at the following simple linear models

$$Y_t = W_t\Pi + Z_t\Gamma f_t + \varepsilon_t, \quad (13)$$

$$Y_t = (Z_t\Gamma + W_t\Pi)f_t + \varepsilon_t, \quad (14)$$

where  $Z_t$  and  $W_t$  are  $N \times 1$  vectors,  $f_t$  is a scalar factor, and  $\varepsilon_t$  is independent of  $Z_t$  and  $W_t$ . Let us further assume  $\Pi = \Gamma$  and  $W_t = Z_t g_t + v_t$ , where  $g_t$  is a scalar coefficient, and  $v_t$  is independent of  $Z_t$ . Then (13) and (14) can be rewritten as

$$Y_t = Z_t\Gamma f_t^* + \varepsilon_t^*, \quad (15)$$

$$Y_t = Z_t\Gamma f_t^{**} + \varepsilon_t^{**}, \quad (16)$$

where  $f_t^* = f_t + g_t$ ,  $\varepsilon_t^* = v_t\Gamma + \varepsilon_t$ ,  $f_t^{**} = f_t(1 + g_t)$ , and  $\varepsilon_t^{**} = v_t\Gamma f_t + \varepsilon_t$ . Thus, if only  $Z_t$  is used for estimating (13) (i.e., the sieve approximation error of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  is large), then  $\hat{F}$  can consistently estimates  $F^* = (f_1^*, \dots, f_T^*)'$  up to a scalar; if only  $Z_t$  is used for estimating (14) (i.e., the sieve approximation error of  $\beta(\cdot)$  is large), then  $\hat{F}$  can consistently estimate  $F^{**} = (f_1^{**}, \dots, f_T^{**})'$  up to a scalar. In both cases,  $\hat{F}$  fails to consistently estimate the space spanned by  $F$ , unless  $g_t$  is proportional to  $f_t$  in the former case and is not changing over  $t$  in the latter case. The finding also suggests that misspecification of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  may cause inconsistent estimation of  $F$ , thus motivates us to develop a specification test for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  in Section 4.2.

Second, Theorem 3.1 provides a fast convergence rate of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$ . For

example, when  $T = O(N)$ ,  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{B}$  attains the optimal rate  $O_p(J^{-2\kappa} + J/(NT))$ , which is the fastest rate that one can obtain when  $F$  were known. Assume  $J^{-2\kappa}N = O(1)$ , which can be satisfied for sufficiently large  $\kappa$  under the restriction  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then  $\hat{F}$  attains the optimal rate  $O_p(1/N)$ , which is the fastest rate that one can obtain when  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  were known. This implies that the nonparametric specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  do not deteriorate the optimal rate for estimating  $F$  as long as  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  are sufficiently smooth (i.e.,  $\kappa$  is sufficiently large), or parametric specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  do not necessarily improve the estimation of  $F$ . This implication is important in developing the specification test for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  in Section 4.2. The fast convergence rate result also allows to derive the asymptotic distributions of the estimators.

The requirement  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$  is standard for sieve approximations (e.g. Belloni et al. (2015)). Note that if the functional forms of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  are known and specified accordingly, then there is no sieve approximation error and we can dispense with the requirement that  $J \rightarrow \infty$  as the asymptotic properties continue to hold for a fixed  $J$ .

### 3.2 Asymptotic Distribution

We focus on deriving the asymptotic distributions of  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{B}$ , since our main concern is inference for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . Let  $\Omega \equiv \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T f_t^\dagger f_s^\dagger Q_t^{-1} E[\phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{is})'] \times Q_s^{-1} E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]/NT$ , where  $f_t^\dagger = (1, (f_t - \bar{f})')'$  and  $Q_t = \sum_{i=1}^N E[\phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})']/N$ . It is a variance-covariance matrix, which will appear in the asymptotic distributions of  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{B}$ . The second theoretical result is established as follows.

**Theorem 3.2.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.6 hold. Let  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{B}$  be given in (10). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then there is a  $JM \times (K + 1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  such that*

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a) - \mathbb{G}_a\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH) - \mathbb{G}_B\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right),$$

where  $\mathbb{G}_a = (I_{JM} - B\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')(\mathbb{N}_1 - \mathbb{G}_B\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f}) - B\mathcal{H}\mathbb{G}'_Ba$  and  $\mathbb{G}_B = \mathbb{N}_2B'BM$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$  and  $\mathcal{M}$  are nonrandom matrices given in Lemma F.15, and  $\mathbb{N}_1$  and  $\mathbb{N}_2$  are the first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}$ .

Theorem 3.2 establishes a strong approximation:  $(\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a), \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH))$  can be well approximated by a normal random matrix  $(\mathbb{G}_a, \mathbb{G}_B)$ , in the sense that their difference converges in probability to zero when  $T = o(N)$ ,  $NTJ^{-2\kappa} = o(1)$  and  $J = o(\min\{N^{1/5}, N/T\})$ . Therefore,  $(\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a), \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH))$  behaves like a normal random matrix. Here, the dimensions of  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a)$  and  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)$  grow with  $J$ , so the classical central limit theorem does not apply. Instead, we use the Yurinskii's coupling to establish the strong approximation that allows for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over  $t$ .

## 4 Bootstrap Inference

In this section, we develop a weighted bootstrap approach to estimate the distribution of  $(\mathbb{G}_a, \mathbb{G}_B)$ , and a specification test for linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ .

### 4.1 Weighted Bootstrap

It seems straightforward to estimate the distribution of  $(\mathbb{G}_a, \mathbb{G}_B)$  by estimating its unknown components. However, it may be challenging to estimate  $\Omega$ , since we allow for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over  $t$ . In order to circumvent this challenge, we develop a weighted bootstrap, which may have an additional computational advantage.

Let  $\{w_i\}_{i \leq N}$  be a sequence of independently and identically distributed positive random variables with  $E[w_i] = 1$  and  $\text{var}(w_i) = \omega_0 > 0$ . For example,

$w_i$ 's can be drawn from the standard exponential distribution and  $\omega_0 = 1$ . For each  $i$ , we assign the same weight  $w_i$  to all observations over  $t$  to maintain the dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over  $t$ . Let  $\Phi(Z_t)^* \equiv (\phi(z_{1t})w_1, \dots, \phi(z_{Nt})w_N)'$  and  $\tilde{Y}_t^* \equiv (\Phi(Z_t)^* \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^* Y_t$ , which is bootstrap version of  $\tilde{Y}_t$ . To define the bootstrap estimators of  $a$  and  $B$ , let  $\tilde{Y}^* \equiv (\tilde{Y}_1^*, \dots, \tilde{Y}_T^*)$  and  $\bar{\tilde{Y}}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T \tilde{Y}_t^* / T$ . The bootstrap estimators are given by

$$\hat{B}^* = \tilde{Y}^* M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1} \text{ and } \hat{a}^* = (I_{JM} - \hat{B}^* (\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} \hat{B}^{*'}) \bar{\tilde{Y}}^*, \quad (17)$$

which mimic  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{a}$  following the formulas  $\hat{B} = \tilde{Y} M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{a} = (I_{JM} - \hat{B} \hat{B}') \bar{\tilde{Y}} = (I_{JM} - \hat{B} (\hat{B}' \hat{B})^{-1} \hat{B}') \bar{\tilde{Y}}$ . We propose to estimate the distribution of  $(\mathbb{G}_a, \mathbb{G}_B)$  by the distribution of  $(\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a}), \sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}))$  conditional on the data. The validity of the bootstrap for  $\hat{B}$  can be quickly seen when  $T = 2$  and  $K = 1$ .<sup>4</sup>

**Remark 4.1.** The bootstrap can be easily adapted for unbalanced panels. The key step is to obtain  $\tilde{Y}_t^*$ . We may write  $\tilde{Y}_t^* = [\sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it}) \phi(z_{it})' w_i]^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it}) y_{it} w_i$ . In the presence of unbalanced panels, we may obtain  $\tilde{Y}_t^*$  by taking the two sums over  $i$ 's, for which both  $z_{it}$  and  $y_{it}$  are observed in time period  $t$ . This is equivalent to replacing missing data with zeros and proceeding as balanced panels. Prior to this, we need to generate  $\{w_i\}_{i \leq N_{\max}}$  once, where  $N_{\max}$  is the number of all observation unit  $i$ 's. The asymptotic results established below continue to hold as  $\min_{t \leq T} N_t \rightarrow \infty$ , where  $N_t$  is the sample size in time period  $t$ .

Let  $p^*$  be the probability measure with respect to  $\{w_i\}_{i \leq N}$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . The third theoretical result is established as follows.

**Theorem 4.1.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.7 hold. Let  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{a}^*$  and  $\hat{B}^*$  be given in (10) and (17). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then there is a  $JM \times (K + 1)$  random matrix*

<sup>4</sup>In this case,  $\hat{B} = (\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2) / \|\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2\|$ ,  $BH = B(f_1 - f_2) / \|\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2\|$  and  $\hat{B}^* = (\tilde{Y}_1^* - \tilde{Y}_2^*) / \|\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2\|$ . Thus, the distribution of  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH) = \sqrt{NT}(\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2 - B(f_1 - f_2)) / \|\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2\|$  can be estimated by the distribution of  $\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\tilde{Y}_1^* - \tilde{Y}_2^* - (\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2)) / \|\tilde{Y}_1 - \tilde{Y}_2\| = \sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})$  conditional on the data by the weighted bootstrap in Belloni et al. (2015).



$\mathbb{N}^*$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that

$$\|\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a}) - \mathbb{G}_a^*\| = O_{p^*} \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}) - \mathbb{G}_B^*\|_F = O_{p^*} \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right),$$

where  $\mathbb{G}_a^* = (I_{JM} - B\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')(N_1^* - \mathbb{G}_B^* \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}) - B\mathcal{H}\mathbb{G}_B^* a$  and  $\mathbb{G}_B^* = N_2^* B' B \mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$  and  $\mathcal{M}$  are nonrandom matrices given in Lemma F.15, and  $N_1^*$  and  $N_2^*$  are the first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}^*$ .

Theorem 4.1 implies that the distribution of  $(\mathbb{G}_a, \mathbb{G}_B)$ , which is equal to the distribution of  $(\mathbb{G}_a^*, \mathbb{G}_B^*)$ , can be approximated by the distribution of  $(\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a}), \sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}))$  conditional on the data, when  $T = o(N)$ ,  $NTJ^{-2\kappa} = o(1)$  and  $J = o(\min\{N^{1/5}, N/T\})$ . The result allows for the same weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over  $t$  as Theorem 3.2.

**Remark 4.2.** A more natural bootstrap estimator for  $B$  is given by  $\hat{B}^{**}$ , whose columns are the eigenvectors of  $\tilde{Y}^* M_T \tilde{Y}^{*'} / T$  corresponding to its first  $K$  largest eigenvalues. We notice that  $\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^{**} - \hat{B})$  conditional on the data may fail to estimate the distribution of  $\mathbb{G}_B$ . The key part of the proof is to show that  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH)$  and  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)$  share a similar asymptotic expansion. Specifically, we show

$$\left\| \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH) - \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' B' B \mathcal{M} \right\|_F = O_p(\delta_{NT})$$

and

$$\left\| \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) - \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^{*'} \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' B' B \mathcal{M} \right\|_F = O_p(\delta_{NT}),$$

where  $\delta_{NT} = \sqrt{NT}J^{-\kappa} + \sqrt{TJ/N} + \sqrt{J\xi_J}(\log J/N)^{1/4}$ . Let  $\hat{F}^* \equiv \tilde{Y}^{*'} \hat{B}^{**}$  and

$H^* \equiv (F'M_T\hat{F}^*)(\hat{F}^{*'}M_T\hat{F}^*)^{-1}$ . Similarly, we can show

$$\left\| \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^{**} - BH^*) - \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' B' B \mathcal{M} \right\|_F = O_p(\delta_{NT}).$$

Thus,  $\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^{**} - \hat{B})$  conditional on the data may fail to estimate the distribution of  $\mathbb{G}_B$ , since  $\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(H^* - H)$  is not asymptotically negligible due to the relatively slow convergence rate of  $\hat{F}$  and  $\hat{F}^*$ . Since  $\hat{B}^{**} = \tilde{Y}^* M_T \hat{F}^* (\hat{F}^{*'} M_T \hat{F}^*)^{-1}$ , it is important to use  $\hat{F}$  rather than  $\hat{F}^*$  in (17) to ensure that  $\hat{B}^*$  and  $\hat{B}$  share a common rotational transformation matrix and are centered around the same quantity  $BH$ , rendering the validity of the bootstrap.

**Significance tests for  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ .** We can immediately use Theorems 3.2 and 4.1 for several significance tests. We can test whether  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  by comparing  $NT\hat{a}'\hat{a}$  with the  $1 - \alpha$  quantile of  $NT(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})'(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})/\omega_0$  conditional on the data for  $0 < \alpha < 1$ . Similarly, we can test whether  $\phi_j(z_{it,m})$ 's are significant in  $\alpha(z_{it})$  for some given  $j$ 's and  $m$ 's, and whether  $\phi_j(z_{it,m})$ 's are jointly significant in  $\beta(z_{it})$  for some given  $j$ 's and  $m$ 's, which is equivalent to whether certain rows of  $BH$  are jointly zero. However, due to the lack of identification, we are not able to test the significance of each component of  $\beta(z_{it})$ ; due to the full rank requirement in Assumption A.2(i), we cannot use Theorems 3.2 and 4.1 to test whether  $\beta(\cdot) = 0$ .

## 4.2 Specification Test

In order to test for linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , we develop a test by comparing their estimators under the null and the alternative. Specifically, we consider the following the hypothesis:

$$\begin{aligned} H_0 : \alpha(z_{it}) &= \gamma' z_{it} \text{ and } \beta(z_{it}) = \Gamma' z_{it} \text{ for some } \gamma, \Gamma \text{ and all } i \leq N, t \leq T \text{ v.s.} \\ H_1 : \inf_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \inf_{\pi} E[|\alpha(z_{it}) - \pi' z_{it}|^2] &> 0 \text{ or } \inf_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \inf_{\Pi} E[\|\beta(z_{it}) - \Pi' z_{it}\|^2] > 0. \end{aligned} \quad (18)$$

Estimators of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  under  $H_1$  are already given by  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  in (10). Let  $\vec{Y}_t \equiv (Z_t' Z_t)^{-1} Z_t' Y_t$ ,  $\vec{Y} \equiv (\vec{Y}_1, \dots, \vec{Y}_T)$ , and  $\bar{\vec{Y}} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T \vec{Y}_t / T$ . Estimators of  $\alpha(z_{it})$

and  $\beta(z_{it})$  under  $H_0$  are given by  $\hat{\gamma}'z_{it}$  and  $\hat{\Gamma}'z_{it}$ , where  $\hat{\Gamma} = \bar{Y}'M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{\gamma} = \bar{Y} - \hat{\Gamma}\hat{B}'\bar{Y}$ . Three remarks for  $\hat{\gamma}$  and  $\hat{\Gamma}$  are as follows. First, we use the unrestricted estimator  $\hat{f}_t$  rather than a restricted one by imposing  $H_0$  to ensure that  $\hat{\Gamma}'z_{it}$  and  $\hat{\beta}(z_{it})$  share a common rotational transformation matrix, which is important in justifying the validity of the test. Second, in  $\hat{\gamma}$  we use  $\hat{B}'\bar{Y} = \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{f}_t/T$ , which is an unrestricted estimator of  $\bar{f}$ , rather than the restricted estimator  $(\hat{\Gamma}'\hat{\Gamma})^{-1}\hat{\Gamma}'\bar{Y}$  under  $H_0$  to avoid the full rank requirement of  $\Gamma$ . Third, we note that using  $\hat{f}_t$  does not cause efficiency loss in estimating  $\Gamma$  and  $\gamma$ , since  $\hat{f}_t$  has attained the optimal rate as discussed after Theorem 3.1. Our test statistic is

$$\mathcal{S} = \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |\hat{\gamma}'z_{it} - \hat{\alpha}(z_{it})|^2 + \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\Gamma}'z_{it} - \hat{\beta}(z_{it})\|^2. \quad (19)$$

To obtain critical values, we adopt the bootstrap method. Let  $\bar{Y}_t^* \equiv (Z_t^{*'}Z_t)^{-1}Z_t^{*'}Y_t$ ,  $\bar{Y}^* \equiv (\bar{Y}_1^*, \dots, \bar{Y}_T^*)$ , and  $\bar{Y}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T \bar{Y}_t^*/T$ , where  $Z_t^* = (z_{1t}w_1, \dots, z_{Nt}w_N)'$ . It is shown in the proof of Theorem 4.2 that under  $H_0$ ,  $\mathcal{S} = \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma)'z_{it} - (\hat{a} - a)' \phi(z_{it})|^2/J + \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)'z_{it} - (\hat{B} - BH)' \phi(z_{it})\|^2/J + o_p(J^{-1/2})$ . In view of this, we may estimate the null distribution of  $\mathcal{S}$  by the distribution of

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{S}^* &= \frac{1}{J\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma})'z_{it} - (\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})' \phi(z_{it})|^2 \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{J\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma})'z_{it} - (\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 \end{aligned} \quad (20)$$

conditional on the data, where  $\hat{\Gamma}^* = \bar{Y}^*M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{\gamma}^* = \bar{Y}^* - \hat{\Gamma}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}\hat{B}^{*'}\bar{Y}^*$ . For  $0 < \alpha < 1$ , let  $c_{1-\alpha}$  be the  $1 - \alpha$  quantile of  $\mathcal{S}^*$  conditional on the data. Thus, we construct the test as follows: reject  $H_0$  if  $\mathcal{S} > c_{1-\alpha}$ .

**Theorem 4.2.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.8 hold. Let  $\mathcal{S}$  be given in (19), and  $c_{1-\alpha}$  be given after (20) for  $0 < \alpha < 1$ . Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . In addition, assume  $T = o(N)$ ,  $J = o(\min\{N^{1/5}, N/T\})$  and  $NTJ^{-2\kappa} = o(1)$ . Then ,*

$$P(\mathcal{S} > c_{1-\alpha}) \rightarrow \alpha \text{ under } H_0 \text{ and } P(\mathcal{S} > c_{1-\alpha}) \rightarrow 1 \text{ under } H_1.$$

The validity of the test does not require  $T \rightarrow \infty$ , as all above results. It also holds when  $T \rightarrow \infty$  but at a slower rate than  $N$ , which is usually true in asset pricing.

## 5 Determining the Number of Factors

We now address the problem of estimating the number of factors  $K$ . To solve the problem, we develop two estimators: one by maximizing the ratio of two adjacent eigenvalues (Ahn and Horenstein, 2013), and another by counting the number of “large” eigenvalues (Bai and Ng, 2002). To define the estimators, let  $\lambda_k(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)$  denote the  $k$ th largest eigenvalue of the  $JM \times JM$  matrix  $\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T$ . The first estimator is given by

$$\hat{K} = \arg \max_{1 \leq k \leq JM/2} \frac{\lambda_k(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)}{\lambda_{k+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)}. \quad (21)$$

Here,  $\hat{K}$  is constrained to between 1 and  $JM/2$ . This is not restrictive, since we assume that  $K \geq 1$  is fixed and  $J \rightarrow \infty$ . The second estimator is given by

$$\tilde{K} = \#\{1 \leq k \leq JM : \lambda_k(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \lambda_{NT}\}, \quad (22)$$

where  $\#A$  denotes the cardinality of  $A$  and  $0 < \lambda_{NT} \rightarrow 0$  is a tuning parameter.

**Theorem 5.1.** (A) Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3, A.5(i) and A.9 hold. Let  $\hat{K}$  be given in (21). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$ ; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\min\{\sqrt{N}, \sqrt{T}\})$  and  $NJ^{-2\kappa} = o(1)$ . Then

$$P(\hat{K} = K) \rightarrow 1.$$

(B) Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3 hold. Let  $\tilde{K}$  be given in (22). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ ; (iv)  $0 < \lambda_{NT} \rightarrow 0$  and  $\lambda_{NT} \min\{N/J, J^{2\kappa}\} \rightarrow \infty$ . Then

$$P(\tilde{K} = K) \rightarrow 1.$$

As the final theoretical result of the paper, Theorem 5.1 demonstrates that  $\hat{K}$  and  $\tilde{K}$  are consistent estimators of  $K$ . The consistency of  $\hat{K}$  requires  $T \rightarrow \infty$ , while the consistency of  $\tilde{K}$  does not require  $T \rightarrow \infty$ . The latter relies on the choice of  $\lambda_{NT}$ . In practice,  $\hat{K}$  is recommended when  $T$  is large, and  $\tilde{K}$  is recommended when  $T$  is small.

## 6 Empirical Application

A central question in empirical asset pricing is why different assets earn different average returns. While asset pricing theory attributes cross-sectional differences in asset returns to risk exposures, there is substantial evidence suggesting a role for mispricing captured by dependence of returns on asset characteristics, which suggests potential market inefficiency. Much of the debate centers around multi-factor models that aim to link average returns to factor loadings following Fama and French (1993), who pursue a portfolio-sorting approach to constructing asset pricing factors. Since their seminal paper, hundreds of factors have been proposed, collectively dubbed a “*factor zoo*” by Cochrane (2011) and further discussed by Harvey et al. (2016). While some of the factor models have an explicit justification based on economic theory, many implicitly rely on the idea that factors capture common variation in portfolio returns, thus appealing to arbitrage pricing theory and its extensions (Ross, 1976; Chamberlain and Rothschild, 1982; Connor and Korajczyk, 1986, 1988). Since implementing the latter requires knowledge of the conditional covariance matrix of returns, which is infeasible to estimate when  $N$  is larger than  $T$ , most studies rely on stock characteristics to proxy for (imperfectly measured) factor exposures. However, this makes distinguishing between the two types of explanations virtually impossible, as exemplified by the “characteristics versus covariances” debate (Daniel and Titman, 1997). Our method is perfectly suited for resolving this debate, since it allows characteristics to simultaneously appear in both pricing errors and conditional covariances with unobserved common factors, which they also help recover.

We consider the following semiparametric characteristic-based factor model

$$r_{it} = \alpha(z_{i,t-1}) + \beta(z_{i,t-1})'f_t + \varepsilon_{it}, i = 1, \dots, N, t = 1, \dots, T, \quad (23)$$

where  $r_{it}$  is the excess return of asset  $i$  (e.g., stock  $i$ ) in time period  $t$ ,  $z_{i,t-1}$  is a vector of characteristics in time period  $t - 1$ ,  $f_t$  is a  $K \times 1$  vector of unobserved latent factors, the pricing error (i.e.,  $\alpha(z_{i,t-1})$ ) and the risk exposures to factors (i.e.,  $\beta(z_{i,t-1})$ ) are nonparametric functions of characteristics (i.e.,  $z_{i,t-1}$ ). The model falls into the general framework of model (1), where we need to interpret  $z_{it}$  as characteristics in time period  $t - 1$ . This model provides a unified approach for studying the cross section of asset returns that nests the characteristic-based model and the risk-based model. The modelling of the pricing error and the risk exposures not only provides a way to disentangle the *alpha* versus *beta* explanations, but also allows us to estimate a model for a large set of individual stocks. In addition, we do not need to rely on ex ante knowledge to pre-specify the latent factors. Distinct from the models in Connor and Linton (2007), Connor et al. (2012), Kelly et al. (2019), and Kim et al. (2020), we allow for time-varying characteristics, nonzero pricing error, nonlinearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , and unknown number of factors. These are all crucial features of our approach, and not just for the sake of generality. For example, as illustrated in Section 3.1, failure to take into account the time-varying features of characteristics or mis-specifications in the functional forms of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  may result in misleading estimation of factors.

## 6.1 Data and Methodology

We use the same dataset used in Kelly et al. (2019), which is originally from Freyberger et al. (2020). The data set contains monthly returns of 12,813 individual stocks and 36 associated characteristics with sample periods from July, 1962 to May, 2014. The data is in the form of an unbalanced panel, for which our methods are applicable. See the above two papers for the detailed descriptions of the data. For ease of comparison, we also use the same 36 characteristics as those authors. By following the same procedure in Kelly et al. (2019), we transform the values of the characteristics to relative ranking values with range  $[-0.5, 0.5]$ .

This can make the contributions of individual characteristic in pricing error and risk exposures comparable, and can further avoid the distorting effects from the outliers. To satisfy the large  $N$  requirement, we select the sample period with at least 1,000 individual stocks that have observations on both returns and the 36 characteristics, which is different from the case with at least 100 individual stocks in Kelly et al. (2019). This yields a sample from September, 1968 to May, 2014.

To estimate the model, we implement the regressed-PCA by choosing the basis functions  $\phi(z_{it})$  as  $(1, z'_{it})'$  and linear B-splines of  $z_{it}$ . Using  $(1, z'_{it})'$  leads to linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , while using linear B-splines of  $z_{it}$  leads to nonlinear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , where  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  are continuous piecewise linear functions.<sup>5</sup> To estimate the number of factors  $K$ , we use  $\hat{K}$  in (21). To implement the weighted bootstrap, we let  $w_i$ 's be i.i.d. random variables with the standard exponential distribution. To implement the tests of  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  and linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , we set the number of bootstrap draws to 499.

## 6.2 Empirical Results

In order to evaluate the performance of the regressed-PCA, we compute several measures of fit. First, we calculate Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2_Y$ , which captures the variation in individual stock returns explained by “managed portfolios” constructed from the sieve functions of characteristics. Next, we report the panel regression  $R^2_K$  which captures the variations of these managed portfolios explained by different sets of extracted factors. Then, we consider the following three types of  $R^2$  measures that directly speak to the ability of the factor models to explain the cross-section of individual stock returns. The first one is total  $R^2$  as used in Kelly et al. (2019). The second one measures the cross-sectional average of time series  $R^2$  across all stocks, which reflects the ability of the extracted factors to capture common variation in asset returns. The third measures the time series average of cross-sectional goodness of fit measures. As such, it corresponds to

---

<sup>5</sup>The one dimensional linear B-spline  $\{\psi_j(z)\}_{j=1}^J$  is defined on a set of consecutive equidistant knots:  $\{z_1, \dots, z_{J+1}\}$ . For  $j < J$ ,  $\psi_j(z) = (z - z_j)/(z_{j+1} - z_j)$  on  $(z_j, z_{j+1}]$ ,  $\psi_j(z) = (z_{j+2} - z)/(z_{j+2} - z_{j+1})$  on  $(z_{j+1}, z_{j+2}]$ , and 0 elsewhere. For  $j = J$ ,  $\psi_j(z) = (z - z_j)/(z_{j+1} - z_j)$  on  $(z_j, z_{j+1}]$  and 0 elsewhere.

the  $R^2$  of the Fama-MacBeth cross-sectional regression, and is the one of interest for evaluating the model's ability to explain the cross-section of average returns. Fama-MacBeth regression slopes can be interpreted as returns on pure-play characteristic portfolios (corresponding to  $\alpha(\cdot)$ ) and factor-mimicking portfolios (for  $\beta(\cdot)$ ) - i.e. portfolios that have unit loading on one characteristic/factor and zero on all the others). Thus, the Fama-MacBeth  $R^2$  reflects how much ex post variation in returns these portfolios can explain, as pointed out by [Fama \(1976\)](#) and emphasized by [Lewellen \(2015\)](#).

$$R^2 = 1 - \frac{\sum_{i,t} [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_{i,t} r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (24)$$

$$R_{T,N}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{N} \sum_i \frac{\sum_t [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_t r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (25)$$

$$R_{N,T}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{T} \sum_t \frac{\sum_i [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_i r_{i,t}^2}. \quad (26)$$

Second, we consider a version of these goodness-of-fit measures that zero in on the role of factors in explaining the time-series as well as the cross-section of stock returns, by excluding the conditional intercepts:

$$R_f^2 = 1 - \frac{\sum_{i,t} [r_{it} - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_{i,t} r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (27)$$

$$R_{f,T,N}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{N} \sum_i \frac{\sum_t [r_{it} - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_t r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (28)$$

$$R_{f,N,T}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{T} \sum_t \frac{\sum_i [r_{it} - \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{f}_t]^2}{\sum_i r_{i,t}^2}. \quad (29)$$

Third, we assess the out-of-sample prediction. For  $t \geq 120$ , we use the data through  $t-1$  to implement the regressed-PCA and obtain estimators, say  $\hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(\cdot)$ ,  $\hat{\beta}_{t-1}(\cdot)$ ,  $\hat{F}'_{t-1} \equiv (\hat{f}_1^{(t-1)}, \dots, \hat{f}_{t-1}^{(t-1)})$ ; and then compute the out-of-sample prediction of  $r_{it}$  as  $\hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1}) + \hat{\beta}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{\lambda}_t$ , where  $\hat{\lambda}_t = \sum_{s \leq t-1} \hat{f}_s^{(t-1)} / (t-1)$ , that is, the average of factor estimators through  $t-1$ . We can define three types of out-of-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's analogously by replacing  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$ ,  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{f}_t$  with  $\hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(\cdot)$ ,



$\hat{\beta}_{t-1}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{\lambda}_t$ ,

$$R_O^2 = 1 - \frac{\sum_{i,t \geq 120} [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{\lambda}_t]^2}{\sum_{i,t \geq 120} r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (30)$$

$$R_{T,N,O}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{N} \sum_i \frac{\sum_{t \geq 120} [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{\lambda}_t]^2}{\sum_{t \geq 120} r_{i,t}^2}, \quad (31)$$

$$R_{N,T,O}^2 = 1 - \frac{1}{T - 120} \sum_{t \geq 120} \frac{\sum_i [r_{it} - \hat{\alpha}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1}) - \hat{\beta}_{t-1}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{\lambda}_t]^2}{\sum_i r_{i,t}^2}. \quad (32)$$

Finally, we construct an arbitrage portfolio based on a pure-*alpha* strategy and evaluate its performance. By (9) and Theorem 3.1, it is easy to see that  $\tilde{Y}_t' \hat{a} \xrightarrow{p} \|a\|^2$  for each  $t$  as  $N \rightarrow \infty$ . This allows us to construct an arbitrage portfolio based on an estimate of  $a$ . For  $t \geq 120$ , we use the data through  $t - 1$  to implement the regressed-PCA and obtain an estimator of  $a$ , say  $\hat{a}_{t-1}$ ; and then compute the portfolio weights by  $\omega_t = \Phi(Z_{t-1})(\Phi(Z_{t-1})'\Phi(Z_{t-1}))^{-1}\hat{a}_{t-1}$  and the excess return of the portfolio by  $R_t'\omega_t$ , where  $R_t = (r_{1t}, \dots, r_{Nt})'$ . We evaluate the annualized Sharpe ratio of this portfolio.

In Table I, we consider linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  by letting  $\phi(z_{it}) = (1, z_{it}')'$ . In Table II, we consider continuous piecewise linear specifications with 18 characteristics with one internal knot by letting  $\phi(z_{it})$  be linear B-splines of  $z_{it}$ , where we split  $[-0.5, 0.5]$  into two equal-length intervals.<sup>6</sup> In the nonlinear specifications we use characteristics that are shown to be statistically significant under the linear model, as detailed in Appendix E.

The main findings are summarized as follows. First, formal tests select one factor in the linear case and two factors in the nonlinear cases, which is in contrast to the arguments of Kelly et al. (2019) that five factors are needed. Second, the out-of-sample  $R_O^2$  based on our estimated one or two factor model with nonzero  $\alpha(\cdot)$  is 0.54 in the linear specification, 0.59 in the nonlinear specification, both of which are comparable to 0.60 in Kelly et al. (2019)'s linear specifications with five factors. We notice that the total in-sample  $R^2$ 's from this estimated single

---

<sup>6</sup>As a robust check, we further consider continuous piecewise linear specifications with 12 characteristics with two internal knots, where we split  $[-0.5, 0.5]$  into three equal-length intervals; we report the results in Appendix E.

Table I. Results under linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 36 characteristics<sup>†</sup>

Unrestricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) \neq 0$ )										
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1*	26.55	2.54	1.37	0.36	2.07	0.59	0.11	1.72	0.54	3.18
2	36.42	4.52	2.43	1.76	4.08	1.75	1.37	1.74	0.52	3.36
3	45.03	5.70	3.70	2.70	5.24	2.95	2.31	1.77	0.50	3.56
4	52.55	11.69	8.55	9.27	11.28	7.92	8.69	1.77	0.47	3.74
5	58.65	11.90	8.73	9.48	11.49	7.99	8.90	1.70	0.44	3.84
6	64.20	13.90	10.30	11.80	13.53	9.79	11.24	1.68	0.44	3.78
7	69.15	15.59	12.23	13.76	15.23	11.71	13.23	1.63	0.44	3.73
8	72.84	15.93	12.59	13.98	15.56	12.00	13.44	1.61	0.42	3.79
9	76.26	16.08	12.67	14.19	15.72	12.15	13.64	1.61	0.42	3.80
10	79.15	16.23	12.82	14.35	15.87	12.34	13.80	1.60	0.42	3.82
$K$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	$p_\alpha$	$p_{\text{lin}}$					
1-10	0.54	0.64	0.21	< 1%	< 1%					

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 20.89\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure-*alpha* arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure-*alpha* arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure-*alpha* arbitrage strategy;  $p_\alpha$  and  $p_{\text{lin}}$  are the p-values of *alpha* test ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ ) and model specification test (joint linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ ), separately.

Table II. Results under piecewise linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 18 characteristics and one internal knot<sup>†</sup>

Unrestricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) \neq 0$ )										
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1	41.61	5.94	3.47	3.60	5.52	2.99	3.11	2.46	0.69	3.54
2*	59.05	9.56	6.17	6.91	9.18	5.67	6.33	2.39	0.57	4.22
3	64.47	10.42	6.78	7.96	10.03	6.27	7.38	2.36	0.57	4.17
4	68.99	13.83	10.26	11.52	13.40	9.80	10.90	2.19	0.53	4.12
5	72.33	14.32	10.73	11.98	13.91	10.29	11.38	2.19	0.51	4.26
6	75.35	14.71	10.97	12.40	14.29	10.55	11.86	1.95	0.49	3.96
7	77.63	15.28	11.78	12.99	14.84	11.27	12.42	1.90	0.48	3.93
8	80.83	15.44	11.98	13.16	15.10	11.59	12.73	1.73	0.47	3.66
9	82.88	15.84	12.33	13.49	15.48	11.87	13.05	1.31	0.40	3.26
10	85.61	16.39	12.89	13.93	15.71	11.80	13.14	0.88	0.28	3.14
$K$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	$p_\alpha$	$p_{\text{lin}}$					
1-10	0.59	0.64	0.28	< 1%	< 1%					

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 21.11\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure- $\alpha$  arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure- $\alpha$  arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure- $\alpha$  arbitrage strategy;  $p_\alpha$  and  $p_{\text{lin}}$  are the p-values of  $\alpha$  test ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ ) and model specification test (joint linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ ), separately.

factor models is smaller than Kelly et al. (2019)'s. This is not surprising, since the objective of their IPCA estimation is (essentially) maximizing total (in-sample)  $R^2$ . Third, by increasing the number of factors, we can improve the in-sample fit, since all three in-sample  $R^2$ 's increase with  $K$ . However, increasing the number of factors does not necessarily improve the out-of-sample fit of the model, since factor betas simply soaks up the variation that is otherwise captured by *alpha*.<sup>7</sup> Fourth, compared to the linear specification, the nonlinear specifications improve in-sample fitting  $R^2$  significantly and out-of-sample prediction  $R^2$  slightly, meanwhile, the estimation results from the nonlinear specifications are quite close. Both the better performance and robustness show the advantage of nonlinear model estimation based on linear B-splines. Finally, we provide more associated empirical results in Appendix E.

We further use our tests to examine whether factor models explain the cross-section of average stock returns (i.e.  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ ) as well as whether  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  functions are linear in characteristics. First, we find strong evidence to reject the null hypothesis of  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  in our estimated factor models whether we consider the one- or two-factor models that are selected by our formal tests, or indeed any number of factors between one and ten (we report the p-values here concisely in Table I-II to save space, suffice it to say that in all cases the pricing errors are significant at 1% level). This result is in contrast to Kelly et al. (2019) who find that increasing the number of factors can turn rejection to failure to reject, settling on a five-factor model. The difference stems from the nature of factors that we extract: our factors are designed to capture common time-series variation of stock returns, in the spirit of the APT, while the IPCA procedure of Kelly et al. (2019) is designed to fit the cross-section of stock returns as well as their common time-variation, potentially giving up on the former to maximize the latter. Indeed, our factors do a better job of capturing common time variation in stock returns, as exhibited both by the  $R^2$  measures above and, more importantly, by the Sharpe ratios of the arbitrage portfolios that exploit the non-zero alphas. In

---

<sup>7</sup>Formally, this is because  $\hat{\alpha}(z_{i,t-1}) + \hat{\beta}(z_{i,t-1})' \hat{F} 1_T / T = \phi(z_{i,t-1})' (\hat{\alpha} + \hat{B} \hat{F} 1_T / T) = \phi(z_{i,t-1})' \bar{\bar{Y}}$ , which does not depend on  $K$ , where  $\bar{\bar{Y}}$  is the average of the coefficient estimates from the first-step Fama-MacBetch regressions (also see (9)).

particular, we find a high annualized Sharpe ratio for the pure-*alpha* strategy in *all* of the cases that we consider. The Sharpe ratio increases from 3.18 to 3.82 as we increase  $K$  from 1 to 10 in the linear specification, and are in the same range (sometimes exceeding 4) in the nonlinear specifications that utilize B-splines while reducing the number of characteristics used (when we use fewer characteristics, the Sharpe ratio tends to fall with the number of factors in some of the specifications). Importantly, since alphas always decline when additional factors are introduced, the rising Sharpe ratios’ as the number of factors grows is clear evidence of the important role of the factors in hedging out common variation in stock returns, which reduces the volatility of the arbitrage portfolio at a rate that exceeds the decline in *alpha*.

Before proceeding to the detailed investigation of characteristics and nonlinearity, we need to pin down the sign of the single extracted factor. Under the normalization:  $B'B = I_K$  and  $F'M_T F/T$  being diagonal with diagonal entries in descending order, the sign of the single extracted factor is undetermined. To pin down the sign, we let the sample means of the extracted factors to be positive such that the unconditional risk premium is positive. Further, to interpret the latent factors, we also report the factor projection regressions and correlation matrix among the extracted factors and six constructed factors in Appendix E. It is noteworthy to point out that, compared to the linear case, the extracted factors from the nonlinear specifications have much higher correlations with the market excess return, SMB, and RMW.

Empirical studies show that stocks with smaller market capitalization, higher book-to-market ratio (Fama and French, 1993), or higher past returns (Jegadeesh and Titman, 1993) tend to have higher returns, often referred to as “size”, “value”, and “momentum” anomalies in equity market. The presumed “rational” explanation for these anomalies is that smaller or value firms or firms with better past performance have larger exposures to priced systematic risky factors. In order to test this hypothesis, we report the plots of the pricing error and the risk exposure versus six important characteristics. Figure 1 reports the results for the linear specification, and we find a downward sloping factor loading as a function of book-to-market ratio, which rejects a (conditional) one-factor-model explana-

tion of value. Figure 2 reports the results for the nonlinear specification with 18 characteristics with one knot, while we find the associated nonlinear and upward sloping exposure to the second extracted factor, which is more consistent with the risk-based view. Similarly, we find opposite curve slopes from the linear and nonlinear specifications for investment and profitability, where the results from the nonlinear specifications are more consistent with the findings in Fama and French (2015): firms with low investment and high profitability bear greater exposures to systematic risks. As detailed in Appendix E, most of the characteristics contain relevant information about  $\alpha$  and/or  $\beta$ . Overall, estimates from the nonlinear specifications are more consistent with the risk view than those from the linear specification. All the conclusions are robust to different choices of linear B-splines.

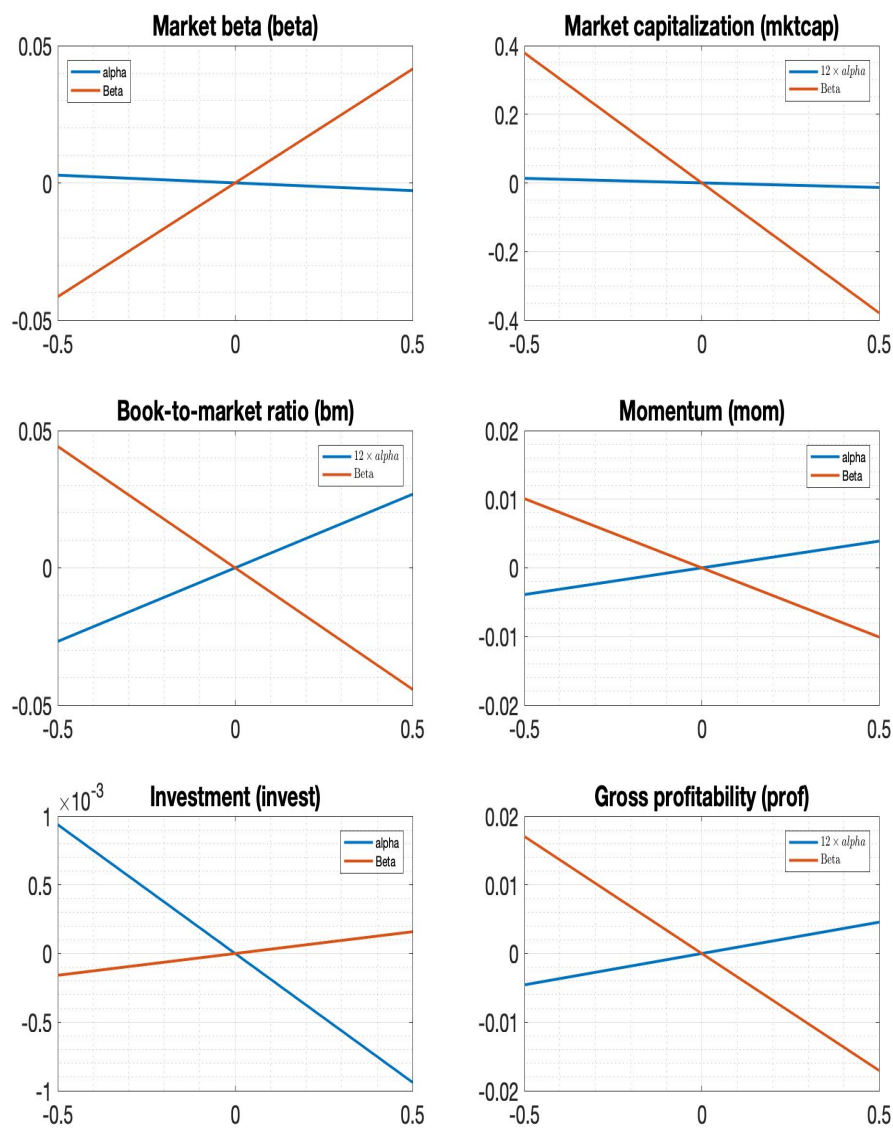
Finally, we check the estimated contribution of each individual characteristic in the pricing error with different numbers of factors. In Figure 3, we report the estimates and their associated 95% confidence intervals for the coefficients in the linear specification. We find that increasing the number of factors does not affect the estimates and confidence intervals significantly. This implies that the estimation of  $\alpha$  is not sensitive to the number of factors and is also contrast to the estimation procedure in Kelly et al. (2019).

To conclude, we not only find strong evidence of nonlinearity but also identify the source of the nonlinearity in both pricing errors and risk exposures.

## 7 Conclusion

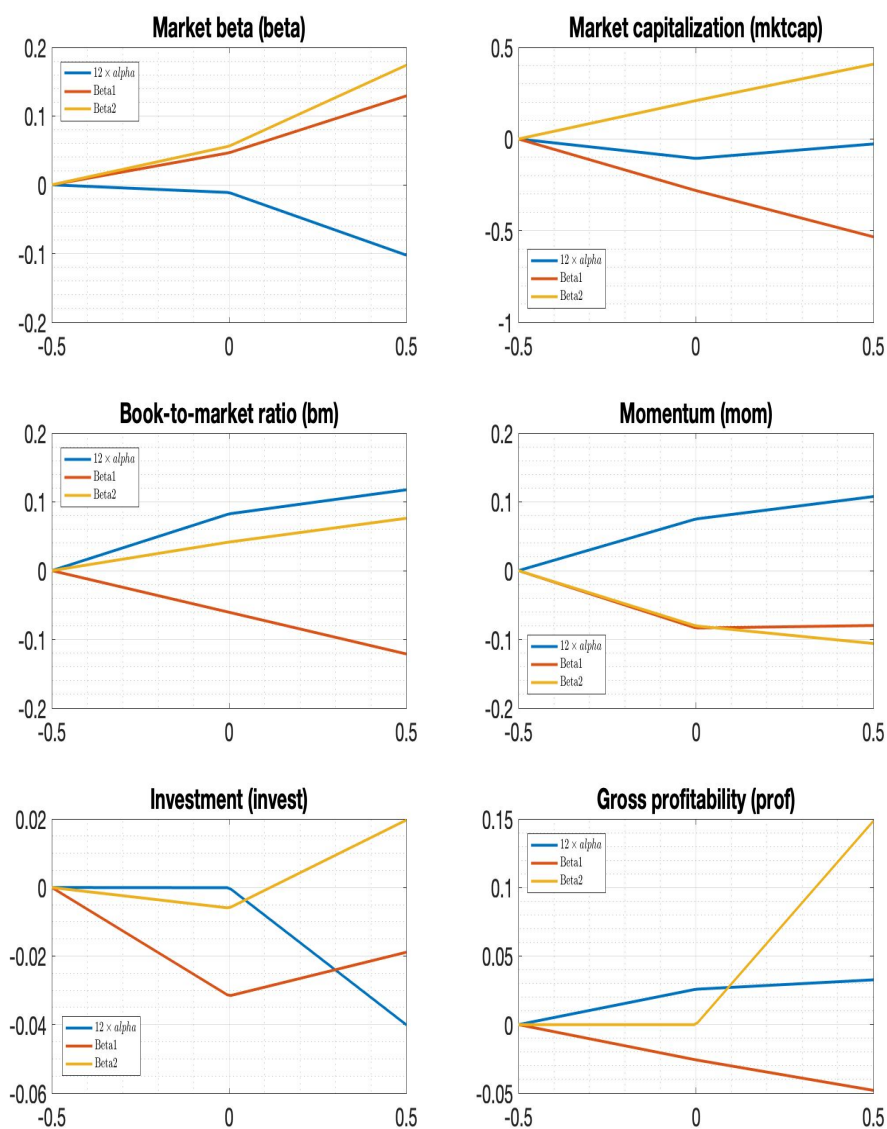
In this paper we developed a simple and tractable sieve estimation of conditional factor models with time-varying covariances and latent factors, as well as a weighted-bootstrap procedure for conducting inference on the intercept and factor loading functions. We established large sample properties of the estimators and validity of the tests for large  $N$ , even when  $T$  is small. These results enable us to estimate conditional (dynamic) behavior of a large set of individual assets from a number of characteristics exhibiting nonlinearity without the need to pre-specify

Figure 1. Characteristics- $\alpha$  and characteristics- $\beta$  plots under linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 36 characteristics



Notes: the six important characteristics are market capitalization (mktcap), market beta (beta), book-to-market ratio (bm), momentum (mom), investment (invest), and gross profitability (prof). To make the magnitude comparable, the annualized values are reported for some alphas.

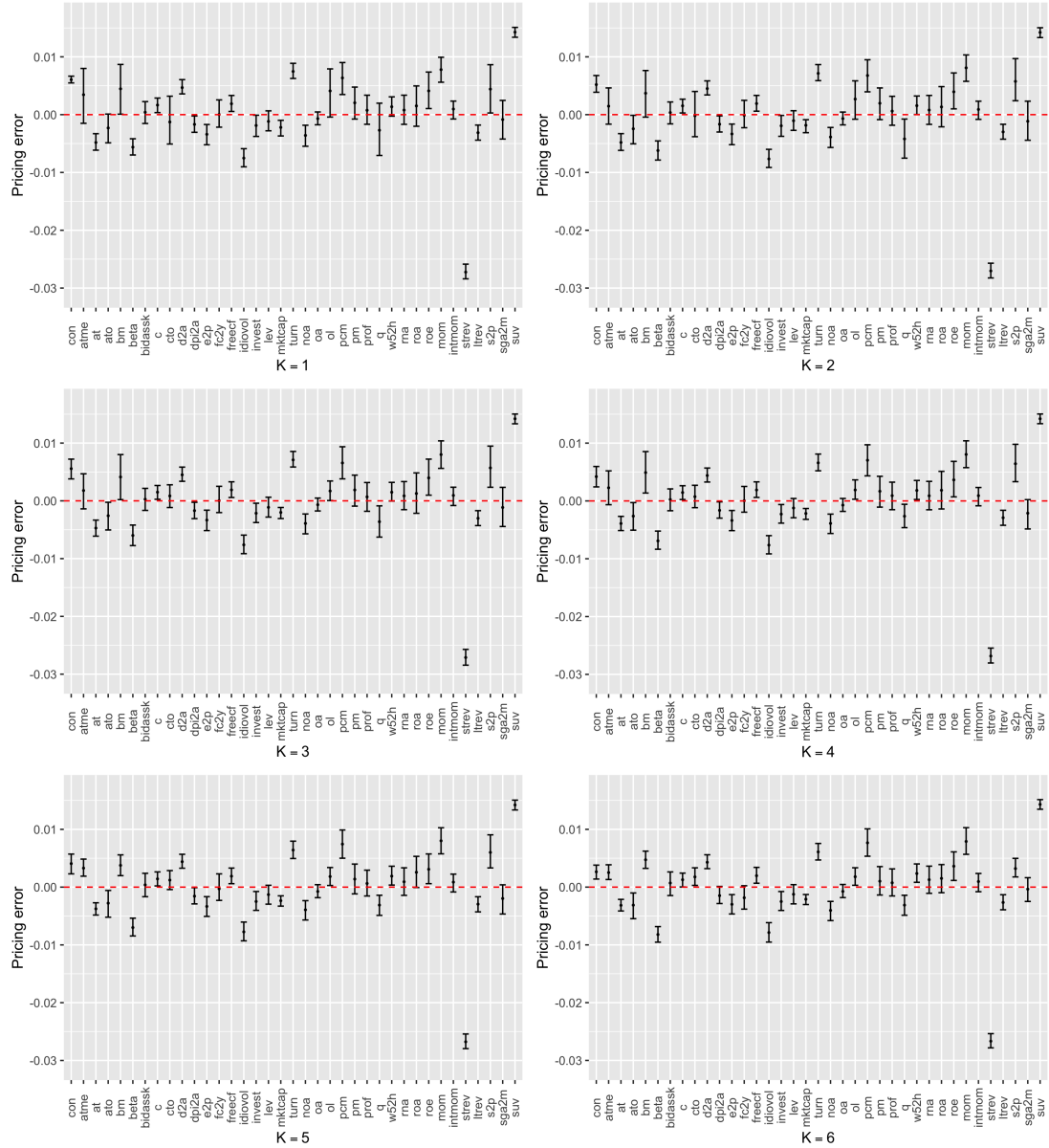
Figure 2. Characteristics- $\alpha$  and characteristics- $\beta$  plots under continuous piecewise linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 18 characteristics and one internal knot



Notes: the six important characteristics are market capitalization (mktcap), market beta (beta), book-to-market ratio (bm), momentum (mom), investment (invest), and gross profitability (prof). To make the magnitude comparable, the annualized  $\alpha$  is reported.



Figure 3. Estimates and 95% confidence intervals of coefficients in  $\alpha$  under linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$



factors, while allowing us to disentangle the *alpha* from betas. We applied these methods to explain the cross-sectional differences of individual stock returns in the US market. We found strong evidence of conditional factor structure as well as nonlinearity in conditional *alpha* and beta functions. Importantly, although only one or two factors are selected by the formal tests, even when a large number of common factors is considered, conditional pricing errors remain large, resulting in arbitrage portfolios with high Sharpe ratios (typically above 3).

## Appendix A Assumptions

**Assumption A.1** (Basis functions). *(i) There are positive constants  $c_{\min}$  and  $c_{\max}$  such that: with probability approaching one (as  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ),*

$$c_{\min} < \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) \leq \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(\hat{Q}_t) < c_{\max},$$

*where  $\hat{Q}_t = \Phi(Z_t)' \Phi(Z_t)/N$ ; (ii)  $\max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})] < \infty$ .*

Since  $\hat{Q}_t = \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'/N$  is a  $JM \times JM$  matrix with  $JM$  much smaller than  $N$ , Assumption A.1(i) can follow from the law of large numbers for finite  $T$  and its uniform variant for  $T \rightarrow \infty$ ; see Proposition C.1 for a set of sufficient conditions. The conditions can be easily verified for B-spline, Fourier series, and polynomials basis functions. In particular, we allow  $Z_t$  to be nonstationary over  $t$ . When  $Z_t$  is not changing over  $t$ , Assumption A.1 reduces to Assumptions 3.3 of Fan et al. (2016a).

**Assumption A.2** (Factor loading functions and factors). *There are positive constants  $d_{\min}$  and  $d_{\max}$  such that: (i)  $d_{\min} < \lambda_{\min}(B'B) \leq \lambda_{\max}(B'B) < d_{\max}$ ; (ii)  $\max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\| < d_{\max}$ ; (iii)  $\lambda_{\min}(F'M_T F/T) > d_{\min}$ ; (iv)  $\max_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)| = O(J^{-\kappa})$  and  $\max_{m \leq M} \sup_z |r_{m,J}(z)| = O(J^{-\kappa})$  for some constant  $\kappa > 1/2$ .*

Assumption A.2(i) is similar to the *pervasive* condition on the factor loadings in Stock and Watson (2002). Similar assumptions also are imposed in Assumption B of Bai (2003) and Assumption 4.1(ii) of Fan et al. (2016a). For simplicity

of presentation, we assume that  $f_t$ 's are nonrandom. Since the dimension of  $B$  is  $JM \times K$ , Assumption A.2(i) requires  $JM \geq K$ . Since the rank of  $M_T$  is  $T - 1$ , Assumption A.2(iii) requires  $T \geq K + 1$ , which implies  $T \geq 2$ . These two requirements are not restrictive, since we assume  $K$  is fixed. Assumption A.2(iv) is standard in the sieve literature. It can be easily satisfied by using B-spline or polynomials basis functions under certain smoothness of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ ; see, for example, Lorentz (1986) and Chen (2007).

**Assumption A.3** (Data generating process). (i)  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$  is independent of  $\{Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$ ; (ii)  $E[\varepsilon_{it}] = 0$  for all  $i \leq N$  and  $t \leq T$ ; (iii) there is  $0 < C_1 < \infty$  such that

$$\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}]| < C_1 \text{ and } \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{js}]| < C_1.$$

Assumption A.3(iii) requires  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  to be weakly dependent over both  $i$  and  $t$ , and is commonly imposed for high-dimensional factor analysis; see, for example, Stock and Watson (2002), Bai (2003), and Fan et al. (2016a). When  $Z_t$  is not changing over  $t$ , Assumption A.3 reduces to Assumptions 3.4 (i) and (iii) of Fan et al. (2016a).

**Assumption A.4** (Intercept function).  $a'B = 0$  and  $\|a\| < C_0$  for some  $0 < C_0 < \infty$ .

Assumption A.4 is needed for the identification of  $\alpha(\cdot)$ . Similar assumption is imposed in Connor et al. (2012) and Assumption 3.1(i) of Kim et al. (2020).

**Assumption A.5** (Rate of convergence). (i)  $\max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] < \infty$ ; (ii)  $0 < \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}) \leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_{it}) < \infty$ , where  $Q_{it} = E[\phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})']$ ; (iii)  $\{z_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  are independent across  $i \leq N$ ; (iv) there is  $0 < C_2 < \infty$  such that

$$\max_{t \leq T} \frac{1}{N^2} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}\varepsilon_{kt}\varepsilon_{\ell t}]| < C_2$$

and

$$\frac{1}{N^2 T} \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{js}]| \right)^2 < C_2.$$

Assumptions A.1-A.4 allow us to establish a preliminary rate of the estimators in Theorem C.1. Assumption A.5 is an additional assumption that we need to establish a fast rate in Theorem 3.1. Assumption A.5(i) strengthens Assumption A.1(ii). Assumption A.5(ii) requires that the second moment matrix  $E[\phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})']$  is bounded and nonsingular for all  $i$  and  $t$ , which is widely used in the sieve literature; see, for example, Newey (1997) and Huang (1998). Assumption A.5(iii) is commonly imposed in the sieve literature, which is used to justify the asymptotic convergence of  $\hat{Q}_t$ . Assumption A.5(iv) allows for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over both  $i$  and  $t$ . The second condition is similar to the second condition in Assumption A.3(iii); both are satisfied if  $\max_{t \leq T} \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{js}]|/N$  is bounded.

**Assumption A.6** (Asymptotic distribution). (i)  $(F'M_T F/T)B'B$  has distinct eigenvalues; (ii)  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  are independent across  $i \leq N$ ; (iii) there is  $0 < C_3 < \infty$  such that

$$\max_{i \leq N} \frac{1}{T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{u=1}^T \sum_{v=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}\varepsilon_{iu}\varepsilon_{iv}]| < C_3.$$

Assumption A.6 is needed in Theorem 3.2. The distinct eigenvalue condition in Assumption A.6(i) is necessary to establish the asymptotic normality, as known in the literature; see, for example, Bai (2003) and Chen and Fang (2019). Assumption A.6(ii) imposes independence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  across  $i$  for simplicity.<sup>8</sup> Assumption A.6(iii) allows for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over  $t$ .

**Assumption A.7** (Bootstrap). (i)  $\{w_i\}_{i \leq N}$  is a sequence of independently and identically distributed positive random variables with  $E[w_i] = 1$  and  $\text{var}(w_i) = \omega_0 > 0$ , and is independent of  $\{Z_t, \varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ ; (ii) there are positive constants  $e_{\min}$  and  $e_{\max}$  such that: with probability approaching one (as  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ),

$$e_{\min} < \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*) \leq \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(\hat{Q}_t^*) < e_{\max},$$

where  $\hat{Q}_t^* = \Phi(Z_t)' \Phi(Z_t)/N$ ; (iii)  $\lambda_{\min}(\Omega) > 0$ .

<sup>8</sup>This assumption allows us to use the Yurinskii's coupling. In fact, we may relax this assumption and alternatively use Li and Liao (2020)'s coupling, so that the dependence across  $i$  can be allowed. However, it is challenging to develop an inference procedure allowing the dependence over both  $i$  and  $t$ . Therefore, we stick with this assumption.

Assumption A.7 is needed in Theorem 4.1. Assumption A.7(i) defines the bootstrap weight  $w_i$  for each  $i$ . Since  $\hat{Q}_t^* = \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'w_i/N$  is a  $JM \times JM$  matrix with  $JM$  much smaller than  $N$ , Assumption A.7(ii) can follow from the law of large numbers for finite  $T$  and its uniform variant for  $T \rightarrow \infty$ , similar to Assumption A.1(i). Assumption A.7(iii) requires nonsingularity of the variance-covariance matrix  $\Omega$ .

**Assumption A.8** (Specification test). *(i) There are positive constants  $g_{\min}$  and  $g_{\max}$  such that: with probability approaching one (as  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ),*

$$g_{\min} < \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Z_t'Z_t/N) \leq \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Z_t'Z_t/N) < g_{\max},$$

*(ii)  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|z_{it}\|^4] < \infty$ ; (iii)  $\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(E[z_{it}z_{it}']) > 0$ ; (iv) with probability approaching one (as  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ),*

$$g_{\min} < \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Z_t^{*'}Z_t/N) \leq \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Z_t^{*'}Z_t/N) < g_{\max};$$

*(v)  $\sup_z |\alpha(z)| < \infty$  and  $\sup_z \|\beta(z)\| < \infty$ .*

Assumption A.8 is needed in Theorem 4.2. Assumptions A.8(i)-(iv) are analogous to Assumptions A.1(i), A.5(i), (ii) and A.7(ii), respectively. When  $z_{it}$  is included as a part of  $\phi(z_{it})$ , which is true in the case of polynomial basis functions, the former are implied by the latter ones. In this case, Assumptions A.8(i)-(iv) thus are redundant.

**Assumption A.9** (Determination of  $K$ ). *(i)  $0 < \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t']) \leq \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t']) < \infty$ ; ii) there is  $0 < C_4 < \infty$  such that*

$$\frac{1}{N^2T + T^2N} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s})| < C_4.$$

Assumption A.9 is needed in Theorem 5.1(i). Assumption A.9(i) requires that the covariance matrix  $E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t']$  is bounded and nonsingular for all  $t$ . In particular,  $\max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t']) < \infty$  allows for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  across  $i$ . When  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  are independent across  $i$ , the condition is satisfied when

$\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\varepsilon_{it}^2] > 0$  and  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\varepsilon_{it}^2] < \infty$ . Assumption A.9(ii) allows for weak dependence of  $\{\varepsilon_{it}\}_{i \leq N, t \leq T}$  over both  $i$  and  $t$ ; see Proposition C.2 for a set of sufficient conditions.

## Appendix B Proofs of Main Results

PROOF OF THEOREM 3.1: Let us begin by defining some notation. For  $A_t = \Delta_t \equiv R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t$  and  $\varepsilon_t$ , let  $\tilde{A}_t \equiv (\Phi(Z_t)' \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' A_t$ . Let  $\tilde{\Delta} \equiv (\tilde{\Delta}_1, \dots, \tilde{\Delta}_T)$  and  $\tilde{E} \equiv (\tilde{\varepsilon}_1, \dots, \tilde{\varepsilon}_T)$ . Then (9) can be written as

$$\tilde{Y} = a1_T' + BF' + \tilde{\Delta} + \tilde{E}, \quad (33)$$

where  $1_T$  denote a  $T \times 1$  vector of ones. Recall  $M_T = I_T - 1_T 1_T' / T$ . Post-multiplying (33) by  $M_T$  to remove  $a$ , we thus obtain

$$\tilde{Y} M_T = B(M_T F)' + \tilde{\Delta} M_T + \tilde{E} M_T. \quad (34)$$

Let  $V$  be a  $K \times K$  diagonal matrix of the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of  $\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T$ . By the definitions of  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$ ,  $(\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T) \hat{B} = \hat{B} V$  and  $M_T \hat{F} = M_T \tilde{Y}' \hat{B}$ . Thus,  $\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F} / T = \hat{B}' (\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T) \hat{B} = V$  and  $H = (F' M_T \hat{F}) (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1} = (F' M_T \tilde{Y}' \hat{B} / T) V^{-1}$ . We may substitute (34) to  $(\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T) \hat{B} = \hat{B} V$  to obtain

$$\hat{B} - BH = [(\tilde{\Delta} + \tilde{E}) M_T \tilde{Y}' / T] \hat{B} V^{-1} = \sum_{j=1}^6 D_j \hat{B} V^{-1}, \quad (35)$$

where  $D_1 = \tilde{\Delta} M_T F B' / T$ ,  $D_2 = \tilde{\Delta} M_T \tilde{\Delta}' / T$ ,  $D_3 = D_6' = \tilde{\Delta} M_T \tilde{E}' / T$ ,  $D_4 = \tilde{E} M_T F B' / T$  and  $D_5 = \tilde{E} M_T \tilde{E}' / T$ . By the definition of  $\hat{a}$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{a} - a &= -\hat{B}(\hat{B} - BH)' a + (I_{JM} - \hat{B} \hat{B}') (BH - \hat{B}) H^{-1} \bar{f} \\ &\quad + (I_{JM} - \hat{B} \hat{B}') \tilde{\Delta} 1_T / T + (I_{JM} - \hat{B} \hat{B}') \tilde{E} 1_T / T. \end{aligned} \quad (36)$$

where  $H^{-1}$  is well defined with probability approaching one by (C.1) and Lemma F.2(ii), and we have used  $a'B = 0$  and  $(I_{JM} - \hat{B} \hat{B}') \hat{B} = 0$ . Noting  $\hat{B}' \hat{B} = I_K$ , we

may substitute (33) to  $\hat{F} = \tilde{Y}'\hat{B}$  to obtain

$$\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1} = 1_T a'(\hat{B} - BH) + F(H')^{-1}(BH - \hat{B})'\hat{B} + \tilde{\Delta}'\hat{B} + \tilde{E}'\hat{B}. \quad (37)$$

where  $(H')^{-1}$  is well defined with probability approaching one by (C.1) and Lemma F.2(ii), and we have used  $a'B = 0$ . Theorem C.1 provides a preliminary rate of  $\|\hat{a} - a\|^2$ ,  $\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2$  and  $\|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F^2$  by using rough bounds based on (35)-(37). To improve the rate of  $\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2$ , we need to treat  $D_5\hat{B}$  in as (35) a whole to establish its rate. By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ , (35) implies

$$\begin{aligned} \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 &\leq 10\|\hat{B}\|_2^2\|V^{-1}\|_2^2 \left( \sum_{j \neq 5}^6 \|D_j\|_F^2 \right) + 2\|V^{-1}\|_2^2\|D_5\hat{B}\|_F^2, \\ &= O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (38)$$

where the equality follows by  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ , Lemmas F.1(i)-(iv), F.2(i) and F.6(ii) and the fact that  $\|D_6\|_F = \|D_3\|_F$ . Given the rate of  $\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2$  in (38), the rate of  $|\hat{a} - a|^2$  immediately follows from the same argument in (C.2). To improve the rate of  $\|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F^2$ , we need to plug in the expansion of  $\hat{B} - BH$  to (36), and treat  $a'D_4$ ,  $D_4'\hat{B}$ ,  $D_5\hat{B}$  and  $\tilde{E}'\hat{B}$  as a whole to establish their rates. By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ , combining (35) and (37) implies

$$\begin{aligned} \|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F &= \left( \sum_{j \neq 4,5}^6 \|D_j\|_F \|\hat{B}\|_2 \|a\| + \|a'D_4\| \|\hat{B}\|_2 + \|a\| \|D_5\hat{B}\|_F \right) \times \\ &\quad \|V^{-1}\|_2 \|1_T\| + \left( \sum_{j \neq 4,5}^6 \|D_j\|_F \|\hat{B}\|_2 + \|D_4'\hat{B}\|_F + \|D_5\hat{B}\|_F \right) \\ &\quad \times \|F\|_2 \|H^{-1}\|_2 \|V^{-1}\|_2 \|\hat{B}\|_2 + \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\hat{B}\|_2 + \|\tilde{E}'\hat{B}\|_F \\ &= O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \sqrt{\frac{T}{N}} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (39)$$

where the equality follows by  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ , Assumptions A.2(ii) and A.4, Lemmas F.1(i)-(iii), F.2, F.3(i), F.6 and F.7(i) and the fact that  $\|D_6\|_F = \|D_3\|_F$ . Thus,

the third result of the theorem follows from (39). The proofs of the last two results of the theorem are similar to the proofs of the last two results of Theorem C.1. ■

**PROOF OF THEOREM 3.2:** Let us first look at (38). The asymptotic distribution can be obtained by choosing large  $J$  and assuming  $T$  not too large such that the terms with  $O_p(J^{-2\kappa})$  and  $O_p(J/N^2)$  are negligible relative to the term with  $O_p(J/NT)$ . Thus, the asymptotic distribution is determined by the term with  $O_p(J/NT)$ . Specifically, by the fact that  $\|C+D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ , (35) implies

$$\begin{aligned} \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH) - \sqrt{NT}D_4\hat{B}V^{-1}\|_F &\leq \sqrt{NT}\|V^{-1}\|_2\|D_5\hat{B}\|_F \\ &+ \sqrt{NT}\|\hat{B}\|_2\|V^{-1}\|_2 \sum_{j \neq 4,5}^6 \|D_j\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (40)$$

where the equality follows by  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ , Lemmas F.1(i)-(iii), F.2(i) and F.6(ii) and the fact that  $\|D_6\|_F = \|D_3\|_F$ . Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t(f_t - \bar{f})/\sqrt{NT}$ . Since  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ ,  $J^{(1/2-\kappa)} = o(\sqrt{NT}/J^\kappa)$ . By the fact that  $\|C+D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ , combining (40) and Lemma F.13 implies

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH) - \mathcal{L}_{NT}B'BM\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right). \quad (41)$$

Note that  $\mathbb{N}_2$  is a  $JM \times K$  matrix from the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}$ . Thus, the second result of the theorem follows from (41) and Lemma F.14. We now look at (36). By the fact that  $\|x+y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ , it implies

$$\begin{aligned} \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a) - (I_{JM} - \hat{B}\hat{B}')[\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)H^{-1}\bar{f}] \\ + \hat{B}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)'a\| \leq \|(I_{JM} - \hat{B}\hat{B}')\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{\Delta}1_T\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (42)$$

where the equality follows by Lemma F.3(i). Given the rate of  $\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F$  in Theorem 3.1 and the rate of  $\|N\tilde{E}1_T\|$  in Lemma F.4(ii), we may replace all  $\hat{B}$  except those in  $\hat{B} - BH$  with  $BH$  to obtain

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a) - (I_{JM} - BHH'B')[\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)H^{-1}\bar{f}]\|$$



$$\|BH\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)'a\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J}{\sqrt{NT}}\right) \quad (43)$$

by noting that  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$  and  $J^{(1/2-\kappa)} = o(\sqrt{NT}/J^\kappa)$ . Similarly, given the rate of  $H - \mathcal{H}$  in Lemma F.15, we may replace all  $H$  except those in  $\hat{B} - BH$  with  $\mathcal{H}$  to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a) - (I_{JM} - B'\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')[\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f}] \\ & + B\mathcal{H}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)'a\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J}{\sqrt{NT}}\right) \end{aligned} \quad (44)$$

Let  $\ell_{NT} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t/\sqrt{NT}$ . Given the rate of  $\|\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \ell_{NT}\|$  in Lemma F.13, we may replace  $\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T$  with  $\ell_{NT}$  to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a) - (I_{JM} - B'\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')[\ell_{NT} - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f}] \\ & + B\mathcal{H}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)'a\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right) \end{aligned} \quad (45)$$

by noting that  $J/\sqrt{NT} = o(\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J/N^{1/4})$ . The arguments in (43)-(45) are similar to those for the first result in Lemma F.13. Note that  $\mathbb{N}_1$  is a  $JM \times 1$  vector from the first column of  $\mathbb{N}$ . Thus, the first result of the theorem follows from (45), Lemma F.14 and the second result of the theorem.  $\blacksquare$

**PROOF OF THEOREM 4.1:** Let us begin by defining some notation. For  $A_t = \Delta_t \equiv R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t$  and  $\varepsilon_t$ , let  $\tilde{A}_t^* \equiv (\Phi(Z_t)^*\Phi(Z_t))^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)^*A_t$ . Let  $\tilde{\Delta}^* \equiv (\tilde{\Delta}_1^*, \dots, \tilde{\Delta}_T^*)$  and  $\tilde{E}^* \equiv (\tilde{\varepsilon}_1^*, \dots, \tilde{\varepsilon}_T^*)$ . Then we have

$$\tilde{Y}^* = a1_T' + BF' + \tilde{\Delta}^* + \tilde{E}^*, \quad (46)$$

where  $1_T$  denotes a  $T \times 1$  vector of ones. Recall  $M_T = I_T - 1_T1_T'/T$ . Post-multiplying (46) by  $M_T$  to remove  $a$ , we thus obtain

$$\tilde{Y}^*M_T = B(M_TF)' + \tilde{\Delta}^*M_T + \tilde{E}^*M_T. \quad (47)$$

Recall that  $V$  is a  $K \times K$  diagonal matrix of the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of

$\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T$  as defined in the proof of Theorem 3.1,  $H = F'M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F}/T = V$  as showed in the proof of Theorem 3.1. By the definitions of  $\hat{B}^*$ ,  $\hat{B}^* = \tilde{Y}^*M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$ . We may substitute (47) to it to obtain

$$\hat{B}^* - BH = [(\tilde{\Delta}^* + \tilde{E}^*)M_T\tilde{Y}'/T]\hat{B}V^{-1} = \sum_{j=1}^6 D_j^* \hat{B}V^{-1}, \quad (48)$$

where in the first equality we have used  $\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F}/T = V$  and  $\hat{F} = \tilde{Y}'\hat{B}$ , in the second equality we have substituted (34) into the equation, and  $D_1^* = \tilde{\Delta}^*M_TFB'/T$ ,  $D_2^* = \tilde{\Delta}^*M_T\tilde{\Delta}'/T$ ,  $D_3^* = \tilde{\Delta}^*M_T\tilde{E}'/T$ ,  $D_4^* = \tilde{E}^*M_TFB'/T$ ,  $D_5^* = \tilde{E}^*M_T\tilde{E}'/T$  and  $D_6^* = \tilde{E}^*M_T\tilde{\Delta}'/T$ . We can conduct the same exercise as in (40) to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) - \sqrt{NT}D_4^*\hat{B}V^{-1}\|_F &\leq \sqrt{NT}\|V^{-1}\|_2\|D_5^*\hat{B}\|_F \\ &+ \sqrt{NT}\|\hat{B}\|_2\|V^{-1}\|_2 \sum_{j \neq 4,5}^6 \|D_j^*\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (49)$$

where the equality follows by  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ , Lemmas F.18 and F.2(i). Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)^*\varepsilon_t(f_t - \bar{f})'/\sqrt{NT}$ . Since  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ ,  $J^{(1/2-\kappa)} = o(\sqrt{NT}/J^\kappa)$ . By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ , combining (49) and Lemma F.19 implies

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) - \mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**}B'BM\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right). \quad (50)$$

Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1}[\Phi(Z_t)^* - \Phi(Z_t)]'\varepsilon_t(f_t - \bar{f})'/\sqrt{NT} = \mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**} - \mathcal{L}_{NT}$ . Note that  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}) = \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)$ . By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ , we now may combine (41) and (50) to obtain

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}) - \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*B'BM\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right). \quad (51)$$

Note that  $N_2^*$  is a  $JM \times K$  matrix from the last  $K$  columns of  $N^*$ . Thus, the second result of the theorem follows from (51) and Lemmas F.5 and F.20. We now show the first result of the theorem. By the definition of  $\hat{a}^*$ ,

$$\hat{a}^* - a = -\hat{B}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}(\hat{B}^* - BH)'a + (I_{JM} - \hat{B}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}\hat{B}^{*'})(BH - \hat{B}^*)H^{-1}\bar{f}$$

$$+ (I_{JM} - \hat{B}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}\hat{B}^{*'})\tilde{\Delta}^*1_T/T + (I_{JM} - \hat{B}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}\hat{B}^{*'})\tilde{E}^*1_T/T, \quad (52)$$

where  $H^{-1}$  is well defined with probability approaching one by (C.1) and Lemma F.2(ii), and we have used  $a'B = 0$  and  $(I_{JM} - \hat{B}^*(\hat{B}^{*'}\hat{B}^*)^{-1}\hat{B}^{*'})\hat{B}^* = 0$ . Let  $\ell_{NT}^{**} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t / \sqrt{NT}$ . By a similar argument as in (42)-(45), we have

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a}^* - a) - (I_{JM} - B\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')[\ell_{NT}^{**} - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH)\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f} \\ & + B\mathcal{H}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH)'a]\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right) \end{aligned} \quad (53)$$

by noting that  $\mathcal{H}'B'B\mathcal{H} = I_K$ . Let  $\ell_{NT}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_t^{-1} [\Phi(Z_t)^* - \Phi(Z_t)]' \varepsilon_t / \sqrt{NT} = \ell_{NT}^{**} - \ell_{NT}$ . Note that  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a}) = \sqrt{NT}(\hat{a}^* - a) - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a)$  and  $\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}) = \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)$ . By the fact that  $\|x + y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ , we now may combine (45) and (53) to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a}) - (I_{JM} - B\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B')[\ell_{NT}^* - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f} \\ & + B\mathcal{H}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})'a]\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right). \end{aligned} \quad (54)$$

Note that  $\mathbb{N}_1^*$  is a  $JM \times 1$  vector from the first column of  $\mathbb{N}^*$ . Thus, the first result of the theorem follows from (54), the second result of the theorem and Lemmas F.5 and F.20. This completes the proof of the theorem.  $\blacksquare$

**PROOF OF THEOREM 4.2:** In order to show the first result, we assume that  $H_0$  is true. Since  $\hat{a}(z_{it}) = \hat{a}'\phi(z_{it})$ ,  $\hat{\beta}(z_{it}) = \hat{B}'\phi(z_{it})$ ,  $\alpha(z_{it}) = a'\phi(z_{it}) + r(z_{it}) = \gamma'z_{it}$  and  $\beta(z_{it}) = B'\phi(z_{it}) + \delta(z_{it}) = \Gamma'z_{it}$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{S} &= \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma)'z_{it} - (\hat{a} - a)'\phi(z_{it}) + r(z_{it})|^2 \\ &+ \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)'z_{it} - (\hat{B} - BH)'\phi(z_{it}) + H'\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \\ &= \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma)'z_{it} - (\hat{a} - a)'\phi(z_{it})|^2 + \mathcal{S}_1 + 2\mathcal{S}_2 + 2\mathcal{S}_3 \\ &+ \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)'z_{it} - (\hat{B} - BH)'\phi(z_{it})\|^2 + \mathcal{S}_4 + 2\mathcal{S}_5 + 2\mathcal{S}_6, \end{aligned} \quad (55)$$

where  $\mathcal{S}_1 = \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^N |r(z_{it})|^2/J$ ,  $\mathcal{S}_2 = \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T z'_{it}(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma)r(z_{it})/J$ ,  $\mathcal{S}_3 = \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \phi(z_{it})'(\hat{a} - a)r(z_{it})/J$ ,  $\mathcal{S}_4 = \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^N \|H'\delta(z_{it})\|^2/J$ ,  $\mathcal{S}_5 = \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T z'_{it}(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)H'\delta(z_{it})/J$  and  $\mathcal{S}_6 = \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \phi(z_{it})'(\hat{B} - BH)H'\delta(z_{it})/J$ . Let  $\mathcal{W}_{NT,a} \equiv (\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma)', -\sqrt{NT}(\hat{a} - a)')'$ ,  $\mathcal{W}_{NT,B} \equiv (\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)', -\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)')'$ ,  $\mathcal{W}_{NT} \equiv (\mathcal{W}_{NT,a}, \mathcal{W}_{NT,B})$  and  $\hat{\mathcal{Q}} \equiv \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T (z'_{it}, \phi(z_{it})')'(z'_{it}, \phi(z_{it})')'/NT$ . By Lemma F.26, (55) implies

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathcal{S} - \frac{1}{J} \mathcal{W}'_{NT,a} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}_{NT,a} - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathcal{W}'_{NT,B} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}_{NT,B}) \\ &= \mathcal{S} - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathcal{W}'_{NT} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}_{NT}) = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^{\kappa+1/2}} \right). \end{aligned} \quad (56)$$

Let  $\mathcal{Q} \equiv E[\hat{\mathcal{Q}}]$ ,  $\mathbb{W}_a \equiv (\mathbb{G}'_\gamma, -\mathbb{G}'_a)'$ ,  $\mathbb{W}_B \equiv (\mathbb{G}'_\Gamma, -\mathbb{G}'_B)'$  and  $\mathbb{W} \equiv (\mathbb{W}_a, \mathbb{W}_B)$ , where  $\mathbb{G}_\gamma$  and  $\mathbb{G}_\Gamma$  are given in Lemma F.27. By Lemmas F.27 and F.28 and Theorem 3.2, (56) implies

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathcal{S} - \frac{1}{J} \mathbb{W}'_a \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}_a - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'_B \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}_B) \\ &= \mathcal{S} - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathbb{W}' \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}) = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^{\kappa+1/2}} + \frac{J^{1/3}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} + \sqrt{\frac{T}{N}} \right). \end{aligned} \quad (57)$$

Let  $\mathcal{W}^*_{NT,a} \equiv (\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma})', -\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})')'$ ,  $\mathcal{W}^*_{NT,B} \equiv (\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma})', -\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})')'$ ,  $\mathcal{W}^*_{NT} \equiv (\mathcal{W}^*_{NT,a}, \mathcal{W}^*_{NT,B})$ ,  $\mathbb{W}^*_a \equiv (\mathbb{G}^*_{\gamma'}, -\mathbb{G}^*_{a'})'$ ,  $\mathbb{W}^*_B \equiv (\mathbb{G}^*_{\Gamma'}, -\mathbb{G}^*_{B'})'$  and  $\mathbb{W}^* \equiv (\mathbb{W}^*_a, \mathbb{W}^*_B)$ , where  $\mathbb{G}^*_{\gamma}$  and  $\mathbb{G}^*_{\Gamma}$  are given in Lemma F.29. Then (20) can be written as  $\mathcal{S}^* = \mathcal{W}^{*'}_{NT,a} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}^*_{NT,a}/J + \text{tr}(\mathcal{W}^{*'}_{NT,B} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}^*_{NT,B})/J = \text{tr}(\mathcal{W}^{*'}_{NT} \hat{\mathcal{Q}} \mathcal{W}^*_{NT})/J$ . By Lemmas F.5, F.28 and F.29 and Theorem 4.1,

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathcal{S}^* - \frac{1}{J} \mathbb{W}^{*'}_a \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}^*_a - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathbb{W}^{*'}_B \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}^*_B) \\ &= \mathcal{S}^* - \frac{1}{J} \text{tr}(\mathbb{W}^{*'} \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}^*) = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^{\kappa+1/2}} + \frac{J^{1/3}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} + \sqrt{\frac{T}{N}} \right). \end{aligned} \quad (58)$$

Let  $\gamma_{NT} \equiv (\sqrt{NT}J^{-\kappa} + J^{5/6}/N^{1/6} + \sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J/N^{1/4} + \sqrt{TJ/N})^{1/2}$ , which is  $o(1)$  by the assumption. Let  $c_{0,1-\alpha}$  be the  $1 - \alpha$  quantile of  $\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}^{*'} \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W}^*)/J$ , which is also the  $1 - \alpha$  quantile of  $\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}' \mathcal{Q} \mathbb{W})/J$ . Then in view of (58), Lemma

A.1 of Belloni et al. (2015) implies that there exists a sequence  $\{\nu_{NT}\}$  such that  $\nu_{NT} = o(1)$  and

$$P(c_{1-\alpha} < c_{0,1-\alpha-\nu_{NT}} - \gamma_{NT}/\sqrt{J}) = o(1), \quad (59)$$

$$P(c_{1-\alpha} > c_{0,1-\alpha+\nu_{NT}} + \gamma_{NT}/\sqrt{J}) = o(1). \quad (60)$$

Note that  $\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W}) = \text{vec}(\mathbb{W})'(I_K \otimes \mathcal{Q})\text{vec}(\mathbb{W})$ . Since  $\mathcal{Q}$  has rank not smaller than  $JM - M$  and the variance of  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{G}_B)$  has full rank,  $\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})$  is bounded below by a random variable with a chi-squared distribution with degree of freedom  $JM - M$  multiplied by a constant, and above by a random variable with a chi-squared distribution with degree of freedom  $JM$  multiplied by a constant. Thus, it follows that

$$\begin{aligned} P(\mathcal{S} \leq c_{1-\alpha}) &\leq P(\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})/J \leq c_{1-\alpha} + \gamma_{NT}/\sqrt{J}) + o(1) \\ &\leq P(\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})/J \leq c_{0,1-\alpha+\nu_{NT}} + 2\gamma_{NT}/\sqrt{J}) + o(1) \\ &\leq P(\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})/\sqrt{J} \leq \sqrt{J}c_{0,1-\alpha+\nu_{NT}} + 2\gamma_{NT}) + o(1) \\ &\leq P(\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})/\sqrt{J} \leq \sqrt{J}c_{0,1-\alpha+\nu_{NT}}) + o(1) \\ &\leq 1 - \alpha + \nu_{NT} + o(1) = 1 - \alpha + o(1), \end{aligned} \quad (61)$$

where the first inequality follows since  $P(|\mathcal{S} - \text{tr}(\mathbb{G}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{G})/J| > \gamma_{NT}/\sqrt{J}) = o(1)$  due to (57), the second inequality follows from (60), and the fourth inequality follows since  $\gamma_{NT} = o(1)$  and  $\text{tr}(\mathbb{W}'\mathcal{Q}\mathbb{W})$  is bounded by chi-squared random variables. By a similar argument,  $P(\mathcal{S} > c_{1-\alpha}) \leq 1 - \alpha + o(1)$ . Therefore, the first result of the theorem follows. To show the second result, we now assume that  $H_1$  is true. Since  $(x + y)^2 \geq x^2/2 - y^2$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{2J}{NT}\mathcal{S} &\geq \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\Gamma}' z_{it} - H'\beta(z_{it})\|^2 - \frac{2}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\beta}(z_{it}) - H'\beta(z_{it})\|^2 \\ &\quad + \frac{2}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |\hat{\gamma}' z_{it} - \hat{\alpha}(z_{it})|^2 \geq c_0 + o_p(1) \text{ for some } c_0 > 0, \end{aligned} \quad (62)$$

where the second inequality follows from Lemmas F.30 and F.31. We have

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{2J}{NT} \mathcal{S}^* &\leq \frac{4}{NT\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma})' z_{it}|^2 + \frac{4}{NT\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})' \phi(z_{it})|^2 \\ &+ \frac{4}{NT\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma})' z_{it}\|^2 + \frac{4}{NT\omega_0} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 = o_p(1), \end{aligned} \quad (63)$$

where the equality follows from Lemma F.32. In view of (63), Lemma A.1 of Belloni et al. (2015) implies that  $2c_{1-\alpha}J/(NT) = o_p(1)$ . This together with (62) thus concludes the second result of the theorem.  $\blacksquare$

PROOF OF THEOREM 5.1: (A) Let  $\theta_k \equiv \lambda_k(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_{k+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)$ . If  $\hat{K} \neq K$ , then there exists some  $1 \leq k \leq K-1$  or  $K+1 \leq k \leq JM/2$  such that  $\theta_k \geq \theta_K$ . Let  $\underline{JM}/2$  be the integer part of  $JM/2$ . Since  $\lambda_1(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_K(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \theta_k$  for all  $1 \leq k \leq K-1$  and  $\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_{\underline{JM}/2}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \theta_k$  for all  $K+1 \leq k \leq JM/2$ , the event of  $\hat{K} \neq K$  implies the event of  $\lambda_1(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_K(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \theta_K$  or the event of  $\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_{\underline{JM}/2}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \theta_K$ . Thus,

$$P(\hat{K} \neq K) \leq P\left(\frac{\lambda_1(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)}{\lambda_K(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)} \geq \theta_K\right) + P\left(\frac{\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)}{\lambda_{\underline{JM}/2}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)} \geq \theta_K\right). \quad (64)$$

By Lemmas F.38 and F.39,  $\lambda_1(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_K(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) = O_p(1)$ ,  $\theta_K/N = C + o_p(1)$  for some positive constant  $C$ , and  $\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)/\lambda_{\underline{JM}/2}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) = O_p(1)$ , since  $\underline{JM}/2 + 1 < JM - K - 1$  for large  $J$ . Thus,  $P(\hat{K} \neq K) \rightarrow 0$ .

(B) If  $\tilde{K} \neq K$ , then  $\lambda_{K-1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) < \lambda_{NT}$  or  $\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \lambda_{NT}$ . Thus,

$$P(\tilde{K} \neq K) \leq P\left(\lambda_{K-1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) < \lambda_{NT}\right) + P\left(\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \lambda_{NT}\right). \quad (65)$$

By Lemma F.38 and  $\lambda_{NT} \rightarrow 0$ ,  $P(\lambda_{K-1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) < \lambda_{NT}) \rightarrow 0$ . For a matrix  $A$ , let  $\sigma_k(A)$  denote the  $k$ th largest singular value of  $A$ . Since  $\lambda_k(AA') = \sigma_k^2(A)$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) &= \sigma_{K+1}^2(\tilde{Y}M_T/\sqrt{T}) = |\sigma_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T/\sqrt{T}) - \sigma_{K+1}(BF'M_T/\sqrt{T})|^2 \\ &\leq \frac{1}{T} \|\tilde{Y}M_T - B(M_TF)'\|_F^2 \leq \frac{2}{T} \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2 + \frac{2}{T} \|\tilde{E}\|_F^2 = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (66)$$

where the second equality follows since the rank of  $B(M_T F)'$  is not greater than  $K$ , the first inequality follows by the Weyl's inequality, the second inequality by (34) and the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the last equality follows from Lemmas F.3(i) and (ii). Since  $\lambda_{NT} \min\{N/J, J^{2\kappa}\} \rightarrow \infty$ , (66) implies  $P(\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}'/T) \geq \lambda_{NT}) \rightarrow 0$ . This completes the proof of the theorem. ■

## References

- AHN, S. AND A. HORENSTEIN (2013): “Eigenvalue Ratio Test for the Number of Factors,” *Econometrica*, 81, 1203–1227.
- BAI, J. (2003): “Inferential theory for factor models of large dimensions,” *Econometrica*, 71, 135–171.
- BAI, J. AND S. NG (2002): “Determining the Number of Factors in Approximate Factor Models,” *Econometrica*, 70, 191–221.
- BELLONI, A., V. CHERNOZHUKOV, D. CHETVERIKOV, AND K. KATO (2015): “Some New Asymptotic Theory for Least Squares Series: Pointwise and Uniform Results,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 186, 345–366.
- CHAMBERLAIN, G. AND M. ROTHCHILD (1982): “Arbitrage, factor structure, and mean-variance analysis on large asset markets,” *Econometrica*, 51, 1281–1304.
- CHEN, L., M. PELGER, AND J. ZHU (2022): “Deep learning in asset pricing,” *Management Science*, forthcoming.
- CHEN, Q. AND Z. FANG (2019): “Improved Inference on the Rank of a Matrix,” *Quantitative Economics*, 10, 1787–1824.
- CHEN, X. (2007): “Large Sample Sieve Estimation of Semi-Nonparametric Models,” *Handbook of Econometrics*, 6, 5549–5632.
- COCHRANE, J. H. (2011): “Presidential address: Discount rates,” *The Journal of finance*, 66, 1047–1108.
- CONNOR, G., M. HAGMANN, AND O. LINTON (2012): “Efficient semiparametric estimation of the Fama–French model and extensions,” *Econometrica*, 80, 713–754.
- CONNOR, G. AND R. A. KORAJCZYK (1986): “Performance measurement with

- the arbitrage pricing theory: A new framework for analysis,” *Journal of financial economics*, 15, 373–394.
- (1988): “Risk and return in an equilibrium APT: Application of a new test methodology,” *Journal of financial economics*, 21, 255–289.
- CONNOR, G. AND O. LINTON (2007): “Semiparametric estimation of a characteristic-based factor model of common stock returns,” *Journal of Empirical Finance*, 14, 694–717.
- DANIEL, K. AND S. TITMAN (1997): “Evidence on the characteristics of cross sectional variation in stock returns,” *Journal of Finance*, 52, 1–33.
- FAMA, E. F. (1976): *Foundations of Finance*, New York: Basic Books.
- FAMA, E. F. AND K. R. FRENCH (1993): “Common risk factors in the returns on stocks and bonds,” *Journal of financial economics*, 33, 3–56.
- (2015): “A five-factor asset pricing model,” *Journal of financial economics*, 116, 1–22.
- FAMA, E. F. AND J. D. MACBETH (1973): “Risk, Return, and Equilibrium: Empirical Tests,” *The Journal of Political Economy*, 81, 607–636.
- FAN, J., Y. LIAO, AND W. WANG (2016a): “Projected principal component analysis in factor models,” *The Annals of Statistics*, 44, 219–254.
- (2016b): “Supplement to “Projected principal component analysis in factor models”,” *DOI:10.1214/15-AOS1364SUPP*.
- FERSON, W. E. AND C. R. HARVEY (1999): “Conditioning variables and the cross section of stock returns,” *The Journal of Finance*, 54, 1325–1360.
- FREYBERGER, J., A. NEUHIERL, AND M. WEBER (2020): “Dissecting characteristics nonparametrically,” *The Review of Financial Studies*, 33, 2326–2377.
- GAGLIARDINI, P. AND H. MA (2019): “Extracting statistical factors when betas are time-varying,” Tech. rep., Available at SSRN 3426534.
- GAGLIARDINI, P., E. OSSOLA, AND O. SCAILLET (2016): “Time-varying risk premium in large cross-sectional equity data sets,” *Econometrica*, 84, 985–1046.
- (2020): “Estimation of large dimensional conditional factor models in finance,” in *Handbook of Econometrics*, vol. 7A, chap. 3.
- GIGLIO, S. AND D. XIU (2021): “Asset pricing with omitted factors,” *Journal of Political Economy*, 129, 1947–1990.



- GREEN, J., J. R. HAND, AND X. F. ZHANG (2017): “The characteristics that provide independent information about average US monthly stock returns,” *The Review of Financial Studies*, 30, 4389–4436.
- GU, S., B. KELLY, AND D. XIU (2021): “Autoencoder asset pricing models,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 222, 429–450.
- HARVEY, C., Y. LIU, AND H. ZHU (2016): “... and the cross-section of expected returns,” *The Review of Financial Studies*, 29, 5–68.
- HUANG, J. (1998): “Projection Estimation in Multiple Regression with Application to Functional ANOVA Models,” *The Annals of Statistics*, 26, 242–272.
- JACOBS, B. I. AND K. N. LEVY (1988): “Disentangling Equity Return Regularities: New Insights and Investment Opportunities,” *Financial Analysts Journal*, 44, 18–43.
- JEGADEESH, N. AND S. TITMAN (1993): “Returns to buying winners and selling losers: Implications for stock market efficiency,” *The Journal of Finance*, 48, 65–91.
- KELLY, B. T., S. PRUITT, AND Y. SU (2019): “Characteristics are covariances: A unified model of risk and return,” *Journal of Financial Economics*, 134, 501–524.
- (2020): “Instrumented principal component analysis,” Tech. rep., Available at SSRN 2983919.
- KIM, S., R. A. KORAJCZYK, AND A. NEUHIERL (2020): “Arbitrage portfolios,” *Review of Financial Studies*, Forthcoming.
- KIRBY, C. (2020): “Firm characteristics, cross-sectional regression estimates, and asset pricing tests,” *The Review of Asset Pricing Studies*, 10, 290–334.
- KOZAK, S., S. NAGEL, AND S. SANTOSH (2018): “Interpreting factor models,” *The Journal of Finance*, 73, 1183–1223.
- LEWBEL, A. (1991): “The Rank of Demand Systems: Theory and Nonparametric Estimation,” *Econometrica*, 59, 711–730.
- LEWELLEN, J. (2015): “The cross section of expected stock returns,” *Critical Finance Review*, 4, 1–44.
- LI, J. AND Z. LIAO (2020): “Uniform Nonparametric Inference for Time Series,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 219, 38–51.

- LORENTZ, G. G. (1986): *Approximation of Functions*, Chelsea Publishing.
- MOTTA, G., C. M. HAFNER, AND R. VON SACHS (2011): “Locally stationary factor models: Identification and nonparametric estimation,” *Econometric Theory*, 27, 1279–1319.
- NEWBY, W. (1997): “Convergence Rates and Asymptotic Normality for Series Estimators,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 79, 147–168.
- PARK, B. U., E. MAMMEN, W. HÄRDLE, AND S. BORAK (2009): “Time series modelling with semiparametric factor dynamics,” *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 104, 284–298.
- PELGER, M. AND R. XIONG (2021): “State-varying factor models of large dimensions,” *Journal of Business Economics & Statistics*, Accepted.
- REISMAN, H. (1992): “Intertemporal Arbitrage Pricing Theory,” *The Review of Financial Studies*, 5, 105–122.
- ROSENBERG, B. AND W. MCKIBBEN (1973): “The prediction of systematic and specific risk in common stocks,” *Journal of Financial and Quantitative Analysis*, 317–333.
- ROSS, S. A. (1976): “The Arbitrage Theory of Capital Asset Pricing,” *Journal of Economic Theory*, 13, 341–360.
- ROUSSANOV, N. (2014): “Composition of wealth, conditioning information, and the cross-section of stock returns,” *Journal of Financial Economics*, 111, 352–380.
- STOCK, J. H. AND M. W. WATSON (2002): “Forecasting using principal components from a large number of predictors,” *Journal of the American Statistical Association*, 97, 1167–1179.
- SU, L. AND X. WANG (2017): “On Time-Varying Factor Models: Estimation and Testing,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 198, 84–101.
- YU, Y., T. WANG, AND R. J. SAMWORTH (2014): “A useful variant of the Davis-Kahan theorem for statisticians,” *Biometrika*, 102, 315–323.

# Online Appendix to “Semiparametric Conditional Factor Models: Estimation and Inference”

Qihui Chen<sup>‡‡</sup>      Nikolai Roussanov<sup>§§</sup>      Xiaoliang Wang<sup>¶¶</sup>  
CUHK-Shenzhen      The Wharton School      UPenn

July 18, 2022

This online appendix is structured as follows. Appendix C presents auxiliary results with proofs. Appendix D presents simulation results, and Appendix E collects additional empirical results. Appendix F collects technical lemmas that are needed in Appendix B and Appendix C, which is relegated to the arXiv version (<https://arxiv.org/abs/2112.07121>) of this paper due to space limitation.

## APPENDIX C - Auxiliary Results

### C.1 A Preliminary Rate of Convergence

**Theorem C.1.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.4 hold. Let  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$ ,  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$  be given in (10). Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then*

$$\begin{aligned}\|\hat{a} - a\|^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right), \\ \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right), \\ \frac{1}{T}\|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F^2 &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N}\right),\end{aligned}$$

---

<sup>‡‡</sup>School of Management and Economics and Shenzhen Finance Institute, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, Shenzhen (CUHK-Shenzhen); qihuichen@cuhk.edu.cn

<sup>§§</sup>The Wharton School, University of Pennsylvania and NBER; nroussan@wharton.upenn.edu

<sup>¶¶</sup>Department of Economics, University of Pennsylvania; xlwang@sas.upenn.edu

$$\begin{aligned}\sup_z |\hat{\alpha}(z) - \alpha(z)|^2 &= O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa-1}} + \frac{J^3}{N^2} + \frac{J^2}{NT} \right) \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2, \\ \sup_z \|\hat{\beta}(z) - H'\beta(z)\|^2 &= O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa-1}} + \frac{J^3}{N^2} + \frac{J^2}{NT} \right) \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2.\end{aligned}$$

Theorem C.1 is an intermediate step in proving Theorem 3.1, which provides a preliminary convergence rate of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$ ,  $\hat{\alpha}(\cdot)$  and  $\hat{\beta}(\cdot)$ .

PROOF: By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the fact that  $\|C+D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ , (35) implies

$$\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 \leq 6\|\hat{B}\|_2^2\|V^{-1}\|_2^2 \left( \sum_{j=1}^6 \|D_j\|_F^2 \right) = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT} \right), \quad (\text{C.1})$$

where the equality follows by Lemmas F.1 and F.2(i) and the fact that  $\|D_3\|_F = \|D_6\|_F$ . By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the fact that  $\|x+y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$  and  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2\|x\|$ , (36) implies

$$\begin{aligned}|\hat{a} - a|^2 &\leq 4 \left( \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 \|a\|^2 + \|BH - \hat{B}\|_F^2 \|H^{-1}\|_2^2 \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2 \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{1}{T} \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2 + \frac{1}{T^2} \|\tilde{E}1_T\|^2 \right) = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT} \right), \quad (\text{C.2})\end{aligned}$$

where the equality follows by (C.1), Assumptions A.2(ii) and A.4, and Lemmas F.2(ii), F.3(i) and F.4(ii). By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the fact that  $\|C+D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ , (37) implies

$$\begin{aligned}\frac{1}{T} \|\hat{F} - F(H')^{-1}\|_F^2 &\leq \frac{4}{T} \left( \|F\|_2^2 \|H^{-1}\|_2^2 \|BH - \hat{B}\|_F^2 + \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2 + \|\tilde{E}\|_F^2 \right) \|\hat{B}\|_2^2 \\ &\quad + \frac{4}{T} \|1_T\|^2 \|BH - \hat{B}\|_F^2 \|a\|^2 = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J}{N} \right), \quad (\text{C.3})\end{aligned}$$

where the equality follows from (C.1), Assumptions A.2(ii) and A.4, and Lemmas F.2(ii), F.3(i) and (ii) by noting that  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Since  $\hat{\beta}(z) = \hat{B}'\phi(z)$  and  $\beta(z) = B'\phi(z) + \delta(z)$ ,

$$\hat{\beta}(z) - H'\beta(z) = \hat{B}'\phi(z) - (BH)'\phi(z) + H'\delta(z). \quad (\text{C.4})$$

By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the fact that  $\|x+y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ ,  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2 \|x\|$  and  $\|A\|_2 \leq \|A\|_F$ , (C.4) implies

$$\begin{aligned} \sup_z \|\hat{\beta}(z) - H'\beta(z)\|^2 &\leq 2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 \sup_z \|\phi(z)\|^2 + 2\|H\|_2^2 \sup_z \|\delta(z)\|^2 \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa-1}} + \frac{J^3}{N^2} + \frac{J^2}{NT}\right) \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{C.5})$$

where the last equality follows from (C.1) and Lemma F.2(i) by noting that  $\sup_z \|\delta(z)\|^2 \leq KM^2 \max_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2 = O(J^{-2\kappa})$  and  $\sup_z \|\phi(z)\|^2 \leq JM \max_{j \leq J} \sup_z |\phi_j(z)|^2$  due to Assumption A.2(iv). The proof of the second last result is similar. This completes the proof of the theorem.  $\blacksquare$

## C.2 Sufficient Conditions for Assumptions

We provide sufficient conditions for Assumptions A.1(i) and A.9(ii) in the following two propositions, justifying that the two assumptions are not restrictive.

**Proposition C.1** (Assumption A.1(i)). *Suppose Assumptions A.5(ii) and (iii) hold. Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\sqrt{T}\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ , where  $\xi_J$  is given above Theorem 3.1. Then Assumption A.1(i) holds.*

PROOF: Let  $Q_t \equiv E[\hat{Q}_t]$  Since  $\sqrt{T}\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ , by Lemma F.11,

$$\max_{t \leq T} \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2 \leq \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4 \right)^{1/4} = O_p\left( \frac{T^{1/4} \xi_J \log^{1/2} J}{\sqrt{N}} \right) = o_p(1). \quad (\text{C.6})$$

By (C.6) and the Weyl's inequality,

$$\left| \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) - \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \right| \leq \max_{t \leq T} \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2 = o_p(1) \quad (\text{C.7})$$

and

$$\left| \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(\hat{Q}_t) - \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_t) \right| \leq \max_{t \leq T} \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2 = o_p(1). \quad (\text{C.8})$$

The result of the lemma thus follows from (C.7) and (C.8) and Assumption A.5(ii) by noting that  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$  and  $\max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_t) \leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_{it})$ .  $\blacksquare$

**Proposition C.2** (Assumption A.9(ii)). *Suppose Assumptions A.3(ii) and A.6(ii) hold. Assume  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\varepsilon_{it}^4] < \infty$  and there is  $0 < C_5 < \infty$  such that*

$$\max_{i \leq N} \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]|^2 < C_5.$$

*Then Assumption A.9(ii) holds.*

PROOF: By the independence condition and Assumption A.3(ii),  $E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}] = 0$  for  $i \neq j$ . Thus, we may have the following decomposition

$$\begin{aligned} & \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks} \varepsilon_{\ell s})| \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}^2, \varepsilon_{ks}^2)| + \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j \neq i}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell \neq k}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{ks} \varepsilon_{\ell s}]| \\ & \quad + 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell \neq k}^N |E[(\varepsilon_{it}^2 - E[\varepsilon_{it}^2]) \varepsilon_{ks} \varepsilon_{\ell s}]| \\ & \equiv \mathcal{T}_1 + \mathcal{T}_2 + \mathcal{T}_3. \end{aligned} \tag{C.9}$$

We next establish bound for  $\mathcal{T}_1, \mathcal{T}_2$  and  $\mathcal{T}_3$ . By the independence condition,

$$\mathcal{T}_1 = \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \text{var}(\varepsilon_{it}^2) \leq \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N E[\varepsilon_{it}^4] \leq NT^2 \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\varepsilon_{it}^4], \tag{C.10}$$

where the first inequality follows from  $\text{var}(\varepsilon_{it}^2) \leq E[\varepsilon_{it}^4]$ . By the independence condition and Assumption A.3(ii),  $E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{ks} \varepsilon_{\ell s}] = 0$  unless  $i = k$  and  $j = \ell$  or  $i = \ell$  and  $j = k$  given  $i \neq j$ . It then follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{T}_2 &= 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j \neq i}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{js}]| = 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j \neq i}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]| |E[\varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{js}]| \\ &\leq 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]| |E[\varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{js}]| = 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \end{aligned}$$

$$\leq 2N \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]|^2 \leq 2N^2 \max_{i \leq N} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]|^2, \quad (\text{C.11})$$

where the second equality follows by the independence condition, the first inequality follows since  $|E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]|^2 \geq 0$ , the second inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality. Again by the independence condition and Assumption A.3(ii),  $E[(\varepsilon_{it}^2 - E[\varepsilon_{it}^2])\varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s}] = 0$  for  $k \neq \ell$ , so  $\mathcal{T}_3 = 0$ . This together with (C.9)-(C.11) and the assumptions thus concludes the result of the proposition. ■

## APPENDIX D - Monte Carlo Simulations

In this appendix, we conduct small-scale Monte Carlo simulations to examine the finite sample performance of our estimators and tests.

We consider the following data generating process. We assume

$$\alpha(z_{it}) = \theta z_{it,1} + \delta z_{it,1}^2 \text{ and } \beta(z_{it}) = (z_{it,2} + \delta z_{it,2}^2, 2z_{it,3} + 2\delta z_{it,3}^2)' \quad (\text{D.1})$$

for  $\theta \geq 0$  and  $\delta \geq 0$ , so  $K = 2$  and  $M = 3$ . Here,  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  when  $\theta = \delta = 0$ , and both  $\alpha(z_{it})$  and  $\beta(z_{it})$  are nonlinear functions of  $z_{it}$  when  $\delta > 0$ . Let

$$z_{it,1} = \sigma_t * u_{it,1}, z_{it,2} = 0.3z_{i(t-1),2} + u_{it,2} \text{ and } z_{it,3} = u_{it,3}, \quad (\text{D.2})$$

where  $u_{it} = (u_{it,1}, u_{it,2}, u_{it,3})'$  are i.i.d.  $N(0, I_3)$  across both  $i$  and  $t$ ,  $\sigma_t$ 's are i.i.d.  $U(1, 2)$  over  $t$ , and  $z_{i0,2}$ 's are i.i.d.  $N(0, 1)$ . Here, all the entries of  $z_{it}$  are varying over  $t$  but in different ways. Let  $f_t = 0.3f_{t-1} + \eta_t$ , where  $\eta_t$ 's are i.i.d.  $N(0, I_K)$  and  $f_0 \sim N(0, I_K/0.91)$ . For  $0 \leq \rho < 1$ ,

$$\varepsilon_t = \rho\varepsilon_{t-1} + e_t, \quad (\text{D.3})$$

where  $e_t$ 's are i.i.d.  $N(0, I_N)$  and  $\varepsilon_0 \sim N(0, I_N/(1-\rho^2))$ . Note that  $\rho$  is a measure of weak dependence of  $\varepsilon_{it}$  over  $t$ . Here,  $u_{it}$ 's,  $\sigma_t$ 's,  $z_{i0}$ 's,  $\eta_t$ 's,  $f_0$ ,  $e_t$ 's and  $\varepsilon_0$  are mutually independent. We generate  $y_{it}$  according to the model (1).

To implement the regressed-PCA, we choose  $\phi(z_{it}) = (z_{it,1}, z_{it,1}^2, z_{it,2}, z_{it,2}^2, z_{it,3}, z_{it,3}^2)'$ , so  $J = 2$  and the sieve approximation error is zero. We let  $\lambda_{NT} =$

$1/\log(N)$  in the implementation of  $\tilde{K}$ . To implement the weighted bootstrap, we let  $w_i$ 's be i.i.d. random variables with the standard exponential distribution. First, we investigate the performance of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$ ,  $\hat{F}$ ,  $\hat{K}$  and  $\tilde{K}$  under different  $(N, T)$ 's. We run simulations for combinations of  $\theta = 0, 0.1, 0.2, \dots, 1$ ,  $\delta = 0, 0.1, 0.2, \dots, 0.5$  and  $\rho = 0, 0.3, 0.7$ . Here we report the results for  $\theta = 1$ ,  $\delta = 0.5$  and  $\rho = 0, 0.3, 0.7$ , while the results for other values of  $\theta$  and  $\delta$  are similar and available upon request. Specifically, we report the mean square errors of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$  in Table D.I, and the correct rates of  $\hat{K}$  and  $\tilde{K}$  in Table D.II. Second, we investigate the performance of testing  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  and linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ . To test  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ , we fix  $\delta = 0$ . Then  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  if and only if  $\theta = 0$ . We report the rejection rates for  $\theta = 0, 0.01, 0.02, \dots, 0.1$  under  $\rho = 0.3$ , while the results under  $\rho = 0$  and  $0.7$  are similar and available upon request. To test linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ , we fix  $\theta = 1$ . Then  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  are linear if and only if  $\delta = 0$ . We report the rejection rates for  $\delta = 0, 0.01, 0.02, \dots, 0.1$  under  $\rho = 0.3$ , while the results under  $\rho = 0$  and  $0.7$  are similar and available upon request. The number of simulation replications is set to 1,000 and the number of bootstrap draws is set to 499 for each replication.

The main findings are as follows. First, as shown in Table D.I, the mean square errors of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$  decrease as  $N$  increases, even for  $T = 10$ . This implies that the estimators are consistent as  $N \rightarrow \infty$  even for small  $T$ . While increasing  $T$  further reduces the mean square errors of  $\hat{a}$  and  $\hat{B}$ , it does not reduce the mean square error of  $\hat{F}$ . Both findings are true regardless of whether  $\rho$ , so the results allow for weak dependence of  $\varepsilon_{it}$  over  $t$ . They are consistent with Theorems C.1 and 3.1. Second, as shown in Table D.II,  $\hat{K}$  and  $\tilde{K}$  can correctly estimate  $K$  in all cases except for some cases when both  $N$  and  $T$  are small. This is consistent with Theorem 5.1. Third, both tests perform well. As shown in Table D.III, the rejection rate of the first test may overreject  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  a little bit for  $\theta = 0$  when  $N = 50$ , but can quickly approach the significance level 5% when  $N$  increases, even for  $T = 10$ . This implies that the test has size control as  $N \rightarrow \infty$  even for small  $T$ . As  $\theta$  increases, the rejection rate approaches one, even for  $T = 10$ . This implies that the test is consistent as  $N \rightarrow \infty$  even for small  $T$ . We find that increasing  $T$  may improve the power of the test (when  $\theta > 0$ , the rejection rate increases as  $T$  increases for all  $N$ ), but meanwhile it may hurt the size of the test



(for example, when  $\theta = 0$ , the rejection rate increases as  $T$  increases from 10 to 100 for  $N = 200$ .) This can be explained by the requirement  $T = o(N)$  in Theorem 4.2 or underlying in Theorem 4.1. As shown in Table D.IV, the second test has a similar performance; the details are omitted. The findings of the second test are consistent with Theorem 4.2. To sum up, the performance of our estimators and bootstrap inference methods is encouraging for large  $N$ , even when  $T$  is small.

Table D.I. Mean square errors of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$  when  $\theta = 1$  and  $\delta = 0.5^\dagger$

(N,T)	$\rho = 0$			$\rho = 0.3$			$\rho = 0.7$		
	$\hat{a}$	$\hat{B}$	$\hat{F}$	$\hat{a}$	$\hat{B}$	$\hat{F}$	$\hat{a}$	$\hat{B}$	$\hat{F}$
(50, 10)	0.0077	0.0154	0.0394	0.0088	0.0170	0.0435	0.0171	0.0295	0.0799
(100, 10)	0.0034	0.0064	0.0168	0.0039	0.0071	0.0186	0.0075	0.0127	0.0336
(200, 10)	0.0016	0.0030	0.0079	0.0018	0.0034	0.0087	0.0033	0.0058	0.0155
(500, 10)	0.0006	0.0012	0.0030	0.0007	0.0013	0.0033	0.0013	0.0022	0.0060
(50, 50)	0.0012	0.0022	0.0423	0.0014	0.0025	0.0466	0.0028	0.0049	0.0842
(100, 50)	0.0005	0.0009	0.0184	0.0006	0.0010	0.0203	0.0012	0.0019	0.0365
(200, 50)	0.0002	0.0004	0.0086	0.0003	0.0004	0.0095	0.0006	0.0008	0.0170
(500, 50)	0.0000	0.0001	0.0033	0.0001	0.0002	0.0037	0.0002	0.0003	0.0065
(50, 100)	0.0005	0.0010	0.0431	0.0006	0.0011	0.0473	0.0013	0.0024	0.0850
(100, 100)	0.0002	0.0004	0.0187	0.0003	0.0004	0.0206	0.0006	0.0008	0.0370
(200, 100)	0.0001	0.0002	0.0087	0.0001	0.0002	0.0096	0.0003	0.0003	0.0172
(500, 100)	0.0000	0.0001	0.0034	0.0000	0.0001	0.0037	0.0001	0.0001	0.0066

<sup>†</sup> The mean square errors of  $\hat{a}$ ,  $\hat{B}$  and  $\hat{F}$  are given by  $\sum_{\ell=1}^{1000} \|\hat{a}^{(\ell)} - a\|^2 / 1000$ ,  $\sum_{\ell=1}^{1000} \|\hat{B}^{(\ell)} - BH^{(\ell)}\|_F^2 / 1000$  and  $\sum_{\ell=1}^{1000} \|\hat{F}^{(\ell)} - F(H^{(\ell)'} )^{-1}\|_F^2 / 1000T$ , where  $\hat{a}^{(\ell)}$ ,  $\hat{B}^{(\ell)}$  and  $\hat{F}^{(\ell)}$  are estimators in the  $\ell$ th simulation replication, and  $H^{(\ell)} \equiv (F' M_T \hat{F}^{(\ell)}) (\hat{F}^{(\ell)'} M_T \hat{F}^{(\ell)})^{-1}$  is a rotational transformation matrix.

Table D.II. Correct rates of  $\hat{K}$  and  $\tilde{K}$  when  $\theta = 1$  and  $\delta = 0.5$

(N,T)	$\rho = 0$		$\rho = 0.3$		$\rho = 0.7$	
	$\hat{K}$	$\tilde{K}$	$\hat{K}$	$\tilde{K}$	$\hat{K}$	$\tilde{K}$
(50, 10)	0.999	1.000	0.999	1.000	0.994	1.000
(100, 10)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	0.999	1.000
(200, 10)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 10)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 50)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(100, 50)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 50)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 50)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 100)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(100, 100)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 100)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 100)	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000

Table D.III. Rejection rates of testing  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$  when  $\delta = 0$  and  $\rho = 0.3^\dagger$

(N,T)	$\theta$										
	0	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.04	0.05	0.06	0.07	0.08	0.09	0.1
(50, 10)	0.089	0.096	0.117	0.150	0.186	0.222	0.283	0.349	0.435	0.512	0.593
(100, 10)	0.096	0.113	0.133	0.184	0.274	0.383	0.502	0.616	0.727	0.827	0.904
(200, 10)	0.057	0.080	0.162	0.270	0.442	0.628	0.790	0.901	0.970	0.990	0.999
(500, 10)	0.048	0.099	0.297	0.573	0.822	0.951	0.994	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 50)	0.094	0.129	0.232	0.415	0.615	0.784	0.915	0.978	0.997	0.998	1.000
(100, 50)	0.085	0.165	0.391	0.691	0.913	0.989	0.998	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 50)	0.073	0.235	0.643	0.941	0.996	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 50)	0.052	0.451	0.960	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 100)	0.089	0.151	0.360	0.693	0.901	0.985	0.999	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(100, 100)	0.076	0.256	0.685	0.956	0.997	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 100)	0.073	0.381	0.925	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 100)	0.059	0.737	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000

<sup>†</sup> The significance level  $\alpha = 5\%$ .

Table D.IV. Rejection rates of testing linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  when  $\theta = 1$  and  $\rho = 0.3^\dagger$

(N,T)	$\delta$										
	0	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.04	0.05	0.06	0.07	0.08	0.09	0.1
(50, 10)	0.086	0.097	0.158	0.288	0.464	0.641	0.801	0.910	0.963	0.990	0.998
(100, 10)	0.080	0.130	0.309	0.565	0.839	0.962	0.993	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 10)	0.058	0.181	0.555	0.932	0.995	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 10)	0.038	0.397	0.963	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 50)	0.093	0.248	0.669	0.965	0.999	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(100, 50)	0.100	0.443	0.966	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 50)	0.070	0.771	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 50)	0.047	0.998	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(50, 100)	0.096	0.459	0.971	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(100, 100)	0.085	0.846	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(200, 100)	0.066	0.994	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000
(500, 100)	0.057	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000

<sup>†</sup> The significance level  $\alpha = 5\%$ .

## APPENDIX E - Additional Empirical Results

In this appendix, we provide the additional results for Section 6. In Table E.I, we report the estimates from the nonlinear specification with 12 characteristics and two knots. Overall, the results are pretty close to those from the nonlinear specification with 18 characteristics and one knot, both of which show the advantage of nonlinear model over the linear model. In Table E.II-E.IV, we report the estimation results by imposing the restriction  $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ . In contrast, when alpha is restricted to be zero, increasing the number of factors does improve the out-of sample fit for the cross-section of expected returns,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ , while both the total and the time-series out of sample fit measures,  $R_O^2$  and  $R_{O,T,N}^2$ , are hump-shaped in the number of factors, peaking around three or four factors, depending on the specification of  $\beta(\cdot)$  (naturally, these measures are small since they are not meant to capture month-to-month variation in returns by design).

We visualize the results of nonlinear specification with 12 characteristics and

two knots in Figure E.1. Similarly, we also find the associated nonlinear and upward sloping exposure to the second extracted factor and the opposite curve slopes from the linear and nonlinear specifications for investment and profitability compared to the linear case. Overall, the conclusions drawn based on the estimates from this nonlinear specification are consistent with the findings from the nonlinear specification with 18 characteristics and one knot.

We further investigate the nonlinearity and contributions of each individual characteristic to pricing errors and risk exposures, we report coefficient estimates for three different specifications in Tables E.V-E.VII. We examine the significance of each individual term in  $\phi(z_{it})$  by the weighted bootstrap in Section 4.1. We find 26 to be significant in the linear specification. We find 22 characteristics to have a significant effect on alpha in the linear specification. The findings indicate that most of the characteristics contain relevant information about both pricing errors and risk exposures (rather just one or the other). In the nonlinear cases, we find that almost all the sieve coefficients are significant, which indicates that it is necessary to introduce the nonlinear terms.

Finally, we provide the factor correlation matrices for extracted factors with 6 popular existing factors in Table E.VIII. The extracted factor from the linear specification is almost uncorrelated with the market excess return factor, while the extracted factors from the nonlinear specifications have much higher correlations with the market excess return, SMB, and RMW. This implies that the extracted factors based on the nonlinear specifications can be expanded well by the observed factors. In contrast, the single factor from the linear specification may not be well explained by the existing important factors. Further, it is noteworthy to point out that the fourth factor in all three specifications is highly correlated with MKT and SMB, although is not a common factor that is selected by the formal tests. Finally, we find that the correlation of extracted factors with MOM is negative for the first two to four factors, shifting to positive for the third factor in the linear case and the fifth (and some of the higher-order) factors in the nonlinear cases. Finally, we also find that the single factor from the linear specification and the first extracted factors from the nonlinear cases are highly correlated, and the second extracted factors from the nonlinear cases are also highly correlated, which

shows the robustness of our model estimation.

Table E.I. Results under piecewise linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 12 characteristics and two internal knots<sup>†</sup>

Unrestricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) \neq 0$ )										
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1	42.78	5.57	2.98	3.32	5.19	2.54	2.83	3.29	0.99	3.33
2*	61.36	9.56	5.97	6.87	9.18	5.51	6.26	3.01	0.80	3.78
3	67.77	10.59	6.65	7.88	10.20	6.15	7.29	2.94	0.80	3.69
4	72.86	13.62	10.09	11.35	13.17	9.64	10.67	2.97	0.78	3.81
5	76.92	14.14	10.43	12.01	13.73	10.01	11.48	2.98	0.76	3.91
6	80.63	14.94	11.45	12.75	14.42	10.51	12.05	1.51	0.41	3.73
7	84.29	15.17	11.59	12.94	14.76	10.77	12.447	1.01	0.33	3.09
8	87.42	15.45	11.87	13.23	15.26	11.47	12.98	0.73	0.22	3.36
9	89.11	16.33	12.68	13.94	16.16	12.31	13.72	0.71	0.20	3.62
10	90.72	16.54	12.91	14.17	16.38	12.54	13.95	0.69	0.18	3.90
$K$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	$p_\alpha$	$p_{\text{lin}}$					
1-10	0.57	0.57	0.27	< 1%	< 1%					

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 20.72\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%);  $p_\alpha$  and  $p_{\text{lin}}$  are the p-values of alpha test ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ ) and model specification test (joint linearity of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ ), separately.

Table E.II. Results under linear specification of  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 36 characteristics<sup>†</sup>

Restricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ )													
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1*	26.62	NA	NA	NA	2.14	0.58	0.06	0.20	0.09	0.07	NA	NA	NA
2	36.48	NA	NA	NA	4.18	1.72	1.37	0.28	0.34	0.02	NA	NA	NA
3	45.10	NA	NA	NA	5.32	2.98	2.30	0.26	0.31	0.01	NA	NA	NA
4	52.62	NA	NA	NA	11.45	8.03	8.86	0.31	0.39	-0.01	NA	NA	NA
5	58.72	NA	NA	NA	11.69	8.18	9.10	0.36	0.47	-0.04	NA	NA	NA
6	64.28	NA	NA	NA	13.85	10.06	11.58	0.38	0.47	-0.11	NA	NA	NA
7	69.26	NA	NA	NA	15.20	11.71	13.17	0.40	0.50	-0.13	NA	NA	NA
8	72.98	NA	NA	NA	15.53	11.99	13.44	0.41	0.53	-0.13	NA	NA	NA
9	76.40	NA	NA	NA	15.73	12.15	13.68	0.40	0.53	-0.08	NA	NA	NA
10	79.29	NA	NA	NA	15.90	12.37	13.85	0.41	0.51	-0.06	NA	NA	NA
$K$	$p_{\text{lin}}$												
1-10 $< 1\%$													

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 20.89\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy;  $p_{\text{lin}}$  is the p-value of model specification test (the linearity of  $\beta(\cdot)$ ).

Table E.III. Results under continuous piecewise linear specification of  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 18 characteristics and one internal knot<sup>†</sup>

Restricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ )													
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1	41.75	NA	NA	NA	5.61	3.00	3.14	0.30	0.34	-0.12	NA	NA	NA
2*	59.20	NA	NA	NA	9.14	5.56	6.26	0.34	0.30	-0.38	NA	NA	NA
3	65.00	NA	NA	NA	9.80	6.24	7.12	0.60	0.76	0.29	NA	NA	NA
4	70.17	NA	NA	NA	10.79	7.23	8.37	0.60	0.80	0.19	NA	NA	NA
5	74.44	NA	NA	NA	14.28	10.57	11.98	0.52	0.66	0.29	NA	NA	NA
6	77.39	NA	NA	NA	14.58	10.88	12.18	0.52	0.63	0.22	NA	NA	NA
7	80.12	NA	NA	NA	14.91	11.07	12.61	0.53	0.58	0.22	NA	NA	NA
8	82.36	NA	NA	NA	15.43	11.93	13.17	0.54	0.57	0.27	NA	NA	NA
9	84.34	NA	NA	NA	15.80	12.28	13.45	0.53	0.54	0.27	NA	NA	NA
10	86.23	NA	NA	NA	15.94	12.37	13.59	0.53	0.54	0.27	NA	NA	NA
$K$	$p_{\text{lin}}$												
1-10	$< 1\%$												

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 21.11\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy;  $p_{\text{lin}}$  is the p-value of model specification test (the linearity of  $\beta(\cdot)$ ).

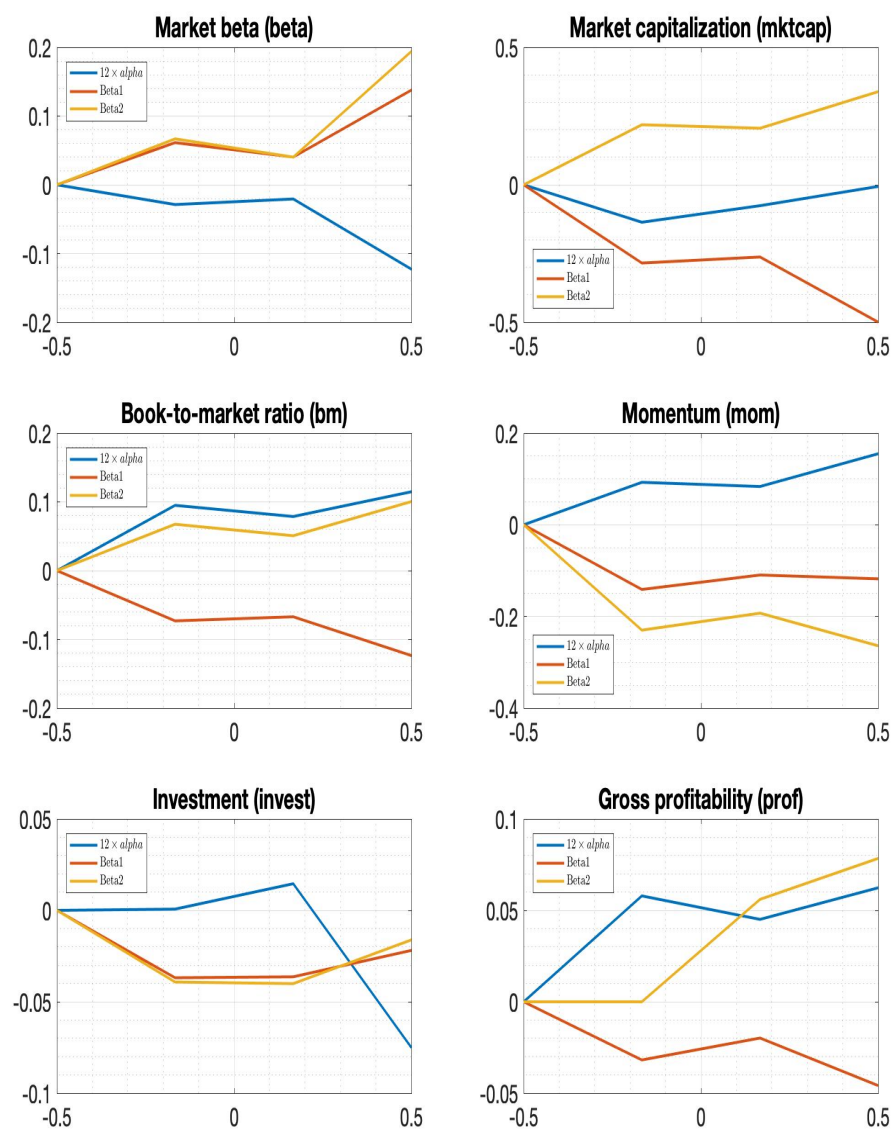
Table E.IV. Results under continuous piecewise linear specification of  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 12 characteristics and two internal knots<sup>†</sup>

Restricted ( $\alpha(\cdot) = 0$ )													
$K$	$R_K^2$	$R^2$	$R_{T,N}^2$	$R_{N,T}^2$	$R_f^2$	$R_{f,T,N}^2$	$R_{f,N,T}^2$	$R_O^2$	$R_{T,N,O}^2$	$R_{N,T,O}^2$	Mean	Std	SR
1	42.95	NA	NA	NA	5.34	2.59	2.90	0.32	0.34	-0.10	NA	NA	NA
2	61.58	NA	NA	NA	9.12	5.45	6.15	0.33	0.21	-0.56	NA	NA	NA
3	68.02	NA	NA	NA	10.15	6.08	7.25	0.62	0.68	0.16	NA	NA	NA
4	74.08	NA	NA	NA	10.77	6.99	7.98	0.57	0.65	0.24	NA	NA	NA
5	78.98	NA	NA	NA	14.15	10.49	11.93	0.55	0.57	0.23	NA	NA	NA
6	82.66	NA	NA	NA	14.43	10.68	12.32	0.56	0.53	0.23	NA	NA	NA
7	85.44	NA	NA	NA	14.93	11.31	12.76	0.55	0.55	0.25	NA	NA	NA
8	87.85	NA	NA	NA	15.37	11.78	13.13	0.56	0.54	0.27	NA	NA	NA
9	89.53	NA	NA	NA	16.28	12.57	13.85	0.56	0.52	0.27	NA	NA	NA
10	91.13	NA	NA	NA	16.49	12.78	14.08	0.57	0.55	0.27	NA	NA	NA
$K$	$p_{\text{lin}}$												
1-10	$< 1\%$												

<sup>†</sup>  $K$ : the number of factor specified (\* denotes the estimated one by our methods); Fama-MacBeth cross sectional regression  $R^2$ :  $R_Y^2 = 20.72\%$ ;  $R_K^2$  measures the variations of managed portfolios captured by different numbers of factors from PCA;  $R^2$ ,  $R_{T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%), see (24)-(26);  $R_f^2$ ,  $R_{f,T,N}^2$ ,  $R_{f,N,T}^2$ : various in-sample  $R^2$ 's (%) without  $\alpha(\cdot)$ , see (27)-(29);  $R_O^2$ ,  $R_{T,N,O}^2$ ,  $R_{N,T,O}^2$ : various out-sample predictive  $R^2$ 's (%), see (30)-(32); Mean: out-of-sample annualized means of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); Std: out-of-sample annualized standard deviations of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy(%); SR: out-of-sample annualized Sharpe ratios of the pure-alpha arbitrage strategy;  $p_{\text{lin}}$  is the p-value of model specification test (the linearity of  $\beta(\cdot)$ ).



Figure E.1. Characteristics-alpha and characteristics-beta plots under continuous piecewise linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 12 characteristics and two internal knots



Notes: the six important characteristics are market capitalization (mktcap), market beta (beta), book-to-market ratio (bm), momentum (mom), investment (invest), and gross profitability (prof). To make the magnitude comparable, the annualized alpha is reported.

Table E.V. Characteristics with linear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$ <sup>†</sup>

Char	Alpha	Beta
a2me	0.0034	-0.2356***
assets	-0.0048***	0.5638***
ato	-0.0023*	0.0398***
bm	0.0045**	-0.0885***
beta	-0.0056***	0.0829***
bidask	0.0004	0.0336***
c	0.0017***	0.0079
cto	-0.0013	-0.0426*
d2a	0.0047***	0.0221***
dpi2a	-0.0017**	-0.0109
e2p	-0.0034***	0.0067
fc2y	0.0000	0.0372***
free_cy	0.0019***	-0.0133*
idiovol	-0.0075***	-0.0077
invest	-0.0019**	0.0003
lev	-0.0012	-0.0200**
mktcap	-0.0022***	-0.7576***
turn	0.0075***	0.0532***
noa	-0.0036***	0.0217**
oa	-0.0007	-0.0083
ol	0.0041*	0.0466*
pcm	0.0064***	-0.0320**
pm	0.0020	0.0319**
prof	0.0008	-0.0341**
q	-0.0027	-0.0552**
w52h	0.0014*	-0.0374***
rna	0.0008	-0.0074
roa	0.0015	-0.0370**
roe	0.0041***	0.0295**
mom	0.0078***	-0.0202*
intmom	0.0010	0.0072
strev	-0.0272***	-0.0512***
ltrev	-0.0031***	-0.0629***
s2p	0.0044**	-0.0151
sga2m	-0.0008	0.0291
suv	0.0143***	0.0147***
Constant	0.0060***	0.0829***

<sup>†</sup> Char = characteristic; \*\*\*:  $p$ -value < 1%; \*\*:  $p$ -value < 5%; \*:  $p$ -value < 10%.

Table E.VI. Characteristics with nonlinear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 18 characteristics and one internal knot<sup>†</sup>

Char	Alpha		Beta1		Beta2	
	$B_1$	$B_2$	$B_1$	$B_2$	$B_1$	$B_2$
assets	0.0013**	-0.0043***	0.0975***	0.2703***	-0.2603***	-0.5175***
ato	-0.0002	-0.0005	0.0193***	0.0168**	-0.0058	-0.0356***
bm	0.0069***	0.0098***	-0.0606***	-0.1212***	0.0416***	0.0761***
beta	-0.0009**	-0.0085***	0.0466***	0.1293***	0.0562***	0.1740***
d2a	0.0037***	0.0051***	0.0197***	0.0175***	-0.0175**	-0.0375***
idiovol	0.0030***	-0.0085***	-0.0133***	0.0186***	0.0003	-0.0078
invest	0.0000	-0.0033***	-0.0316***	-0.0189***	-0.0060	0.0197**
mktcap	-0.0088***	-0.0023***	-0.2815***	-0.5338***	0.2094***	0.4082***
turn	0.0072***	0.0064***	0.0282***	0.0328***	0.0343***	0.1099***
noa	-0.0012**	-0.0056***	-0.0030	-0.0019	-0.0183**	-0.0238***
pcm	0.0010*	0.0044***	-0.0047	-0.0061	-0.0294***	-0.0551***
prof	0.0022***	0.0027***	-0.0257***	-0.0479***	0.0452***	0.1033***
w52h	-0.0049***	0.0018**	-0.1087***	-0.0823***	-0.1042***	-0.0984***
roe	0.0058***	0.0061***	-0.0427***	-0.0228***	-0.0739***	-0.0801***
mom	0.0063***	0.0090***	-0.0835***	-0.0799***	-0.0804***	-0.1060***
strev	-0.0140***	-0.0255***	-0.0458***	-0.0993***	-0.0785***	-0.1252***
ltrev	-0.0018***	-0.0028***	-0.0974***	-0.1033***	-0.0744***	-0.0706***
suv	0.0042***	0.0143***	-0.0048	0.0089**	-0.0029	-0.0016
Constant	-0.0039***		0.6643***		0.5443***	

<sup>†</sup> Char = characteristic; \*\*\*:  $p$ -value < 1%; \*\*:  $p$ -value < 5%; \*:  $p$ -value < 10%.  $B_i$  is the estimated coefficients corresponding to the  $i$ -th sieve basis function.

Table E.VII. Characteristics with nonlinear specifications of  $\alpha(\cdot)$  and  $\beta(\cdot)$  with 12 characteristics and two internal knots<sup>†</sup>

Char	Alpha			Beta1			Beta2		
	$B_1$	$B_2$	$B_3$	$B_1$	$B_2$	$B_3$	$B_1$	$B_2$	$B_3$
assets	0.0002	0.0011**	-0.0059***	0.0782***	0.0780***	0.2297***	-0.2479***	-0.2104***	-0.4264***
bm	0.0079***	0.0066***	0.0096***	-0.0731***	-0.0671***	-0.1236***	0.0675***	0.0507***	0.1005***
beta	-0.0024***	-0.0017***	-0.0102***	0.0614***	0.0404***	0.1378***	0.0669***	0.0403***	0.1941***
idiovol	0.0018***	0.0021***	-0.0095***	0.0004	-0.0201***	0.0381***	-0.0064	0.0110*	-0.0175*
invest	0.0001	0.0012**	-0.0063***	-0.0369***	-0.0363***	-0.0219***	-0.0392***	-0.0401***	-0.0161**
mktcap	-0.0113***	-0.0063***	-0.0005	-0.2845***	-0.2625***	-0.4995***	0.2184***	0.2057***	0.3388***
turn	0.0068***	0.0066***	0.0058***	0.0310***	0.0288***	0.0392***	0.0621***	0.0578***	0.1398***
prof	0.0048***	0.0038***	0.0052***	-0.0318***	-0.0198***	-0.0458***	0.0307***	0.0254***	0.0784***
mom	0.0077***	0.0070***	0.0129***	-0.1411***	-0.1096***	-0.1179***	-0.2299***	-0.1928***	-0.2641***
strev	-0.0165***	-0.0110***	-0.0251***	-0.0788***	-0.0522***	-0.1243***	-0.1241***	-0.0980***	-0.1697***
ltrev	-0.0003	0.0004	-0.0008	-0.1164***	-0.0933***	-0.1132***	-0.0848***	-0.0782***	-0.0740***
suv	0.0051***	0.0039***	0.0153***	-0.0031	-0.0030	0.0109***	-0.0060	-0.0013	-0.0043
Constant	-0.0029***			0.6074***			0.4194***		

<sup>†</sup> Char = characteristic; \*\*\*:  $p$ -value  $< 1\%$ ; \*\*:  $p$ -value  $< 5\%$ ; \*:  $p$ -value  $< 10\%$ .  $B_i$  is the estimated coefficients corresponding to the  $i$ -th sieve basis function.

Table E.VIII. Factors correlation<sup>†</sup>

	MKT	SMB	HML	MOM	RMW	CMA
Linear specifications with 36 characteristics						
<b>Factor1</b>	0.02	0.11	0.10	-0.36	-0.11	0.02
Factor 2	0.26	0.26	0.05	-0.16	-0.20	-0.02
Factor 3	-0.26	-0.22	-0.05	0.18	0.11	0.07
Factor 4	0.58	0.46	-0.33	-0.06	-0.30	-0.30
Factor 5	0.10	0.05	-0.15	0.05	0.01	-0.16
Factor 6	0.32	0.24	-0.13	-0.04	-0.20	-0.13
Factor 7	0.30	0.19	0.02	-0.16	-0.09	-0.10
Factor 8	-0.04	-0.05	0.21	-0.41	0.14	0.16
Factor 9	0.02	0.03	-0.08	0.29	-0.06	-0.03
Factor 10	-0.03	0.01	0.13	0.01	0.09	0.08
Nonlinear specifications with 18 characteristics						
<b>Factor1</b>	0.24	0.37	0.07	-0.37	-0.30	-0.02
<b>Factor2</b>	0.41	0.31	-0.37	-0.09	-0.30	-0.29
Factor 3	-0.22	-0.11	0.45	-0.50	0.23	0.33
Factor 4	0.48	0.21	-0.04	-0.34	-0.15	-0.18
Factor 5	-0.12	-0.01	-0.25	0.14	-0.06	-0.10
Factor 6	0.07	-0.21	-0.04	0.09	0.08	-0.08
Factor 7	-0.15	-0.22	-0.09	-0.12	-0.06	-0.03
Factor 8	-0.01	-0.08	0.14	0.05	0.09	0.05
Factor 9	-0.17	0.03	0.08	0.10	0.10	0.09
Factor 10	-0.21	-0.04	0.11	0.07	0.06	0.06
Nonlinear specifications with 12 characteristics						
<b>Factor1</b>	0.22	0.36	0.05	-0.32	-0.32	-0.01
<b>Factor2</b>	0.39	0.31	-0.27	-0.34	-0.26	-0.26
Factor 3	-0.19	-0.19	0.49	-0.57	0.25	0.30
Factor 4	0.50	0.21	-0.12	-0.13	-0.16	-0.24
Factor 5	-0.04	-0.15	-0.11	0.12	-0.02	-0.07
Factor 6	-0.20	-0.20	-0.14	0.08	0.06	-0.07
Factor 7	-0.05	-0.04	0.16	0.00	0.12	0.04
Factor 8	-0.04	0.19	0.28	0.18	0.06	0.22
Factor 9	0.27	0.06	0.18	0.11	-0.14	0.16
Factor 10	0.17	-0.27	0.22	-0.06	0.21	-0.20

<sup>†</sup> MKT: market excess return; SMB: “small minus big” factor; HML: “high minus low” factor; MOM: “momentum” factor; RMW: “robust minus weak” factor; CMA: “conservative minus aggressive” factor. The highlighted ones are selected factors.

# Technical Appendix to “Semiparametric Conditional Factor Models: Estimation and Inference”

Qihui Chen\*      Nikolai Roussanov†      Xiaoliang Wang‡  
CUHK-Shenzhen      The Wharton School      UPenn

July 18, 2022

This technical appendix collects technical lemmas, which are needed in [Appendix B](#) and [Appendix C](#).

## APPENDIX F - Technical Lemmas

### F.1 Technical Lemmas for Theorem C.1

**Lemma F.1.** *Let  $D_1, D_2, D_3, D_4, D_5$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1.*

- (i) *Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(i), (ii) and (iv),  $\|D_1\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa})$ .*
- (ii) *Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii) and (iv),  $\|D_2\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-4\kappa})$ .*
- (iii) *Under Assumptions A.1, A.2(ii), (iv) and A.3,  $\|D_3\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa}J/N)$ .*
- (iv) *Under Assumptions A.1, A.2(i), (ii) and A.3,  $\|D_4\|_F^2 = O_p(J/NT)$ .*
- (v) *Under Assumptions A.1 and A.3,  $\|D_5\|_F^2 = O_p(J^2/N^2)$ .*

PROOF: (i) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_1\|_F \leq \|B\|_2\|F\|_2\|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F/T$ . The result then immediately follows from Assumptions A.2(i), (ii) and Lemma F.3(i).

(ii) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_2\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2/T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemma F.3(i).

---

\*School of Management and Economics and Shenzhen Finance Institute, The Chinese University of Hong Kong, Shenzhen (CUHK-Shenzhen); qihuichen@cuhk.edu.cn

†The Wharton School, University of Pennsylvania and NBER; nroussan@wharton.upenn.edu

‡Department of Economics, University of Pennsylvania; xlwang@sas.upenn.edu

(iii) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_3\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\tilde{E}\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemma F.3(i) and (ii).

(iv) Since  $\|D_4\|_F \leq \|B\|_2 \|\tilde{E} M_T F\|_F / T$ , the result then immediately follows from Assumption A.2(i) and Lemma F.3(iii).

(v) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_5\|_F \leq \|\tilde{E}\|_F^2 / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemma F.3(ii).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.2.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3 hold. Let  $V$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then (i)  $\|V\|_2 = O_p(1)$ ,  $\|V^{-1}\|_2 = O_p(1)$ , and  $\|H\|_2 = O_p(1)$ ; (ii)  $\|H^{-1}\|_2 = O_p(1)$ , if  $\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F = o_p(1)$ .*

PROOF: (i) Let  $D_7 \equiv D'_1$  and  $D_8 \equiv D'_4$ . Then by (34),  $\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T = BF' M_T F B' / T + \sum_{j=1}^8 D_j$ , where  $D_1, \dots, D_6$  are given below (34). By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ ,

$$\|\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T - BF' M_T F B' / T\|_F \leq \sum_{j=1}^8 \|D_j\|_F = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}} \right), \quad (\text{F.1})$$

where the equality follows by Lemma F.1 and the fact that  $\|D_6\|_F = \|D_3\|_F$ ,  $\|D_7\|_F = \|D_1\|_F$  and  $\|D_8\|_F = \|D_4\|_F$ . Let  $\mathcal{V}$  be a  $K \times K$  diagonal matrix of the eigenvalues of  $(F' M_T F / T) B' B$ , which are equal to the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of  $BF' M_T F B' / T$ . By the Weyl's inequality and the fact that  $\|A\|_2 \leq \|A\|_F$ ,

$$\|V - \mathcal{V}\|_2 \leq \|\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T - BF' M_T F B' / T\|_2 = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}} \right). \quad (\text{F.2})$$

Thus,  $\|V\|_2 = O_p(1)$  and  $\|V^{-1}\|_2 = \lambda_{\min}^{-1}(V) = O_p(1)$  follow from (F.2) and Assumptions A.2(i)-(iii). Let  $H^\diamond \equiv (F' M_T F / T) B' \hat{B} V^{-1}$ . Recall that  $H = (F' M_T \tilde{Y}' \hat{B} / T) V^{-1}$ . Then by the fact that  $\|A\|_2 \leq \|A\|_F$  and  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,

$$\|H - H^\diamond\|_2 \leq \frac{1}{T} (\|F\|_2 \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F + \|\tilde{E} M_T F\|_F) \|\hat{B}\|_2 \|V^{-1}\|_2 = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}} \right), \quad (\text{F.3})$$

where the equality follows from the second result in (i), Assumption A.2(ii) and Lemmas F.3(i) and (iii). Since  $\|H^\diamond\|_2 \leq \|F' M_T F / T\|_2 \|B\|_2 \|\hat{B}\|_2 \|V^{-1}\|_2$ , the third

result in (i) follows from (F.3), the second result in (i) and Assumptions A.2(i) and (ii).

(ii) By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ ,

$$\|\hat{B}'\hat{B} - H'B'BH\|_F \leq \|\hat{B}\|_2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F + \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F\|B\|_2\|H\|_2. \quad (\text{F.4})$$

Thus,  $I_K - H'B'BH = o_p(1)$  by Assumption A.2(i) and  $\|H\|_2 = O_p(1)$ . It then follows that  $I_K - \lambda_{\min}(B'B)H'H$  is negative semidefinite with probability approaching one, since  $H'B'BH - \lambda_{\min}(B'B)H'H$  is positive semidefinite. So, the eigenvalues of  $H'H$  are not smaller than  $\lambda_{\min}^{-1}(B'B)$  with probability approaching one. Thus, the result in (ii) follows from Assumption A.2(i).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.3.** *Let  $\tilde{\Delta}$  and  $\tilde{E}$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1.*

(i) *Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii) and (iv),  $\|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2/T = O_p(J^{-2\kappa})$ .*

(ii) *Under Assumptions A.1 and A.3,  $\|\tilde{E}\|_F^2/T = O_p(J/N)$ .*

(iii) *Under Assumptions A.1, A.2 (ii) and A.3,  $\|\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2/T = O_p(J/N)$ .*

PROOF: (i) By the fact that  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2\|x\|$  and  $\|A\|_2 \leq \|A\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T}\|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2 &= \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\Phi(Z_t)' \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' (R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t)f_t)\|^2 \\ &\leq 2 \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2 \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) \right)^{-1} \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Delta(Z_t)\|_F^2 \\ &\quad + 2 \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) \right)^{-1} \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{t=1}^T \|R(Z_t)\|^2 = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.5})$$

where the last line follows from Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii) and Lemma F.4(iii).

(ii) By the fact that  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2\|x\|$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T}\|\tilde{E}\|_F^2 &= \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\Phi(Z_t)' \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 \\ &\leq \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) \right)^{-2} \frac{1}{N^2T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 = O_p\left(\frac{J}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.6})$$

where the last equality follows from Assumption A.1(i) and Lemma F.4(i).



(iii) By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T} \|\tilde{E} M_T F\|_F^2 &\leq \frac{2}{N^2 T} \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 \\ &\quad + \frac{2 \|\bar{f}\|^2}{N^2 T} \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t \right\|^2 = O_p\left(\frac{J}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.7})$$

where the equality follows from Assumption A.2(ii) and Lemma F.4(ii).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.4.** (i) Under Assumptions A.1(ii) and A.3,

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 = O_p(NTJ).$$

(ii) Under Assumptions A.1, A.2(ii) and A.3,

$$\left\| \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 = O_p(NTJ) \text{ and } \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t \right\|^2 = O_p(NTJ).$$

(iii) Under Assumption A.2(iv),

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\Delta(Z_t)\|_F^2 = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}) \text{ and } \sum_{t=1}^T \|R(Z_t)\|^2 = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}).$$

PROOF: (i) The result follows by the Markov's inequality, since

$$\begin{aligned} E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 \right] &= E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt}) \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N E[\phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt})] E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}] \\ &\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}]| \\ &\leq T J M \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})] \max_{t \leq T} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}]| = O(NTJ), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.8})$$

where the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i), the

first inequality is due to the Cauchy Schwartz inequality, the second inequality follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \leq JM \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})]$ , and the last equality follows from Assumptions A.1(ii) and A.3(iii).

(ii) Let  $E_\varepsilon$  be the expectation with respect to  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . Since  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} E_\varepsilon \left[ \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 \right] &= E_\varepsilon \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} f_t' f_s \varepsilon_{js} \phi(z_{js})' \hat{Q}_s^{-1} \right) \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \hat{Q}_s^{-1} \phi(z_{js}) f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}] \\ &\leq \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2 \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t) \right)^{-2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{js})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]|, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.9})$$

where the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, and the inequality follows by the fact that  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2 \|x\|$ . Moreover,

$$\begin{aligned} &E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{js})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \right] \\ &\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \\ &\leq JM \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})] \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]|, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.10})$$

where the first inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the second one follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \leq JM \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})]$ . Combining (F.9) and (F.10) implies that  $E_\varepsilon[\|\sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t'\|_F^2] = O_p(NTJ)$  by Assumptions A.1, A.2(ii) and A.3(iii). Thus, the first result of the lemma follows by the Markov's inequality and Lemma F.5. The proof of the second result is similar.

(iii) The first result follows since

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\Delta(Z_t)\|_F^2 \leq NTKM^2 \max_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2 = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}), \quad (\text{F.11})$$

where the inequality follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \leq M^2 K \sup_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2$ , and the equality follows from Assumption A.2(iv). The proof of the second result is similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.5.** *Let  $S_1, \dots, S_N$  be a sequence of random variables and  $\mathcal{D}_1, \dots, \mathcal{D}_N$  be a sequence of random vectors. Then  $S_N = O_p(1)$  if and only if  $S_N = O_{p|\mathcal{D}_N}(1)$ , where  $p$  denotes the underlying probability measure and  $p|\mathcal{D}_N$  denotes the probability measure conditional on  $\mathcal{D}_N$ .*

PROOF: By definition,  $S_N = O_p(1)$  means that  $P(|S_N| > \ell_N) = o(1)$  for any  $\ell_N \rightarrow \infty$ , while  $S_N = O_{p|\mathcal{D}_N}(1)$  means that  $P(|S_N| > \ell_N | \mathcal{D}_N) = o_p(1)$  for any  $\ell_N \rightarrow \infty$ . The second follows from the first by the Markov inequality because  $E[P(|S_N| > \ell_N | \mathcal{D}_N)] = P(|S_N| > \ell_N) = o(1)$ . Since  $P(|S_N| > \ell_N | \mathcal{D}_N) \leq 1$  for all  $N$ ,  $\{P(|S_N| > \ell_N | \mathcal{D}_N)\}_{N \geq 1}$  are uniformly integrable. The first follows from the second by the fact that convergence in probability implies moments convergence for uniformly integrable sequences.  $\blacksquare$

## F.2 Technical Lemmas for Theorem 3.1

**Lemma F.6.** *Let  $D_4$  and  $D_5$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ .  
(i) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|D'_4 \hat{B}\|_F^2 = O_p(1/NT)$ .  
(ii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|D'_5 \hat{B}\|_F^2 = O_p(J/N^2)$ .  
(iii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|D'_4 a\|^2 = O_p(1/NT)$ .*

PROOF: (i) Since  $\|D'_4 \hat{B}\|_F \leq \|B\|_2 \|\hat{B}' \tilde{E} M_T F\|_F / T$ , the result then immediately follows from Assumption A.2(i) and Lemma F.7(ii).

(ii) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D'_5 \hat{B}\|_F \leq \|\tilde{E}\|_F \|\hat{B}' \tilde{E}\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(ii) and F.7(i).

(iii) Since  $\|D'_4 a\| \leq \|B\|_2 \|a' \tilde{E} M_T F\| / T$ , the result then immediately follows from Assumption A.2(i) and Lemma F.7(iii).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.7.** *Let  $\tilde{E}$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ .*

- (i) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|\hat{B}'\tilde{E}\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$ .  
(ii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|\hat{B}'\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$ .  
(iii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\|a'\tilde{E}M_TF\|^2/T = O_p(1/N)$ .

PROOF: By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T}\|\hat{B}'\tilde{E}\|_F^2 &\leq \frac{2}{T}\|\tilde{E}\|_F^2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 + \frac{2}{T}\|H\|_2^2\|B'\tilde{E}\|_F^2 \\ &= \frac{2}{T}\|\tilde{E}\|_F^2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 + \frac{2}{N^2T}\|H\|_2^2\left(\sum_{t=1}^T\|B'\hat{Q}_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t\|^2\right) \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{J}{N}\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right) + \frac{1}{N}\right) = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.12})$$

where the second equality follows from  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ , Lemmas F.2(i), F.3(ii) and F.8(i) and Theorem C.1, and the last line is due to  $\kappa > 1/2$  and  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ .

(ii) By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$  and  $\|CD\|_F \leq \|C\|_2\|D\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T}\|\hat{B}'\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2 &\leq \frac{2}{T}\|\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 + \frac{2}{T}\|H\|_2^2\|B'\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2 \\ &\leq \frac{2}{T}\|\tilde{E}M_TF\|_F^2\|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 + \frac{4}{N^2T}\|H\|_2^2\left\|\sum_{t=1}^TB'\hat{Q}_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t f_t'\right\|_F^2 \\ &\quad + \frac{4\|\bar{f}\|^2}{N^2T}\|H\|_2^2\left\|\sum_{t=1}^TB'\hat{Q}_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t\right\|^2 \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{J}{N}\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}} + \frac{J^2}{N^2} + \frac{J}{NT}\right) + \frac{1}{N}\right) = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.13})$$

where the first equality follows from  $J^2\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ , Assumption A.2(ii), Lemmas F.2(i), F.3(iii) and F.8(ii) and Theorem C.1, and the last equality is due to  $\kappa > 1/2$  and  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ .

(iii) By the fact that  $\|x + y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T}\|a'\tilde{E}M_TF\|^2 &\leq \frac{2}{N^2T}\left\|\sum_{t=1}^Ta'\hat{Q}_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t f_t'\right\|^2 + \frac{2\|\bar{f}\|^2}{N^2T}\left|\sum_{t=1}^Ta'\hat{Q}_t^{-1}\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t\right|^2 \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{1}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.14})$$

because  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ , Assumption A.2(ii) and Lemma F.8(ii). ■

**Lemma F.8.** Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ .

(i) Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(i), A.3 and A.5,

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|B' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 = O_p \left( NT \left( 1 + \frac{J \xi_J^2 \log J}{N} \right) \right).$$

(ii) Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(i), (ii), A.3, A.4 and A.5,

$$\begin{aligned} \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T B' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 &= O_p \left( NT \left( 1 + \frac{J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J}}{\sqrt{N}} \right) \right), \\ \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T B' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t \right\|^2 &= O_p \left( NT \left( 1 + \frac{J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J}}{\sqrt{N}} \right) \right), \\ \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T a' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|^2 &= O_p \left( NT \left( 1 + \frac{J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J}}{\sqrt{N}} \right) \right), \\ \left| \sum_{t=1}^T a' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t \right|^2 &= O_p \left( NT \left( 1 + \frac{J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J}}{\sqrt{N}} \right) \right). \end{aligned}$$

PROOF: (i) Let  $Q_t \equiv E[\hat{Q}_t]$ . By the fact that  $\|x + y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \sum_{t=1}^T \|B' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 &\leq 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \|B' Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 \\ &\quad + 2 \sum_{t=1}^T \|B' (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 \equiv 2\mathcal{T}_1 + 2\mathcal{T}_2. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.15})$$

Therefore, it suffices to show that  $\mathcal{T}_1 = O_p(NT)$  and  $\mathcal{T}_2 = O_p(TJ\xi_J^2 \log J)$ . The former holds by the Markov's inequality, since

$$\begin{aligned} E[\mathcal{T}_1] &= E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' Q_t^{-1} B B' Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{jt}) \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N E[\phi(z_{it})' Q_t^{-1} B B' Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{jt})] E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}] \\ &\leq T \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|B' Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it})\|^2] \max_{t \leq T} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}]| = O(NT), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.16})$$

where the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i), the inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the last equality follows from Assumption A.3(iii) and Lemma F.9. The latter also holds, since

$$\begin{aligned}\mathcal{T}_2 &\leq C_{NT} \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^2 \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^2 \\ &\leq C_{NT} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4 \right)^{1/2} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^4 \right)^{1/2} = O_p(TJ\xi_J^2 \log J),\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.17})$$

where  $C_{NT} = \|B\|_2^2 (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-2} (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-2}$ , the first inequality follows since  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , the second inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the equality follows from Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(i) and A.5(ii) and Lemmas F.10 and F.11.

(ii) Let  $Q_t \equiv E[\hat{Q}_t]$ . By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\left\| \sum_{t=1}^T B' \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 &\leq 2 \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T B' Q_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 \\ &\quad + 2 \left\| \sum_{t=1}^T B' (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F^2 \equiv 2\mathcal{T}_1 + 2\mathcal{T}_2.\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.18})$$

Therefore, it suffices to show that  $\mathcal{T}_1 = O_p(NT)$  and  $\mathcal{T}_2 = O_p(\sqrt{NT}J\xi_J\sqrt{\log J})$ . Note that  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ . The former holds by the Markov's inequality, since

$$\begin{aligned}E[\mathcal{T}_1] &= E \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N B' Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} f_t' f_s \varepsilon_{js} \phi(z_{js})' Q_s^{-1} B \right) \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N E \left[ \phi(z_{it})' Q_t^{-1} B B' Q_s^{-1} \phi(z_{js}) \right] f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}] \\ &\leq C_{NT} \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|B' Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it})\|^2] \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| = O(NT),\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.19})$$

where  $C_{NT} = \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2$ , the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, the inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the last equality

follows from Assumptions A.2(ii) and A.3(iii) and Lemma F.9. Let  $E_\varepsilon$  denote the expectation with respect to  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . For the latter, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
E_\varepsilon[\mathcal{T}_2] &= E_\varepsilon \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N B'(\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} f'_t f_s \varepsilon_{js} \phi(z_{js})' (\hat{Q}_s^{-1} - Q_s^{-1}) B \right) \right] \\
&= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) B B' (\hat{Q}_s^{-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \phi(z_{js}) f'_t f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}] \\
&\leq C_{NT}^* \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2 \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{js})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \\
&\leq C_{NT}^{**} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{js})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \right)^2 \right)^{1/2}, \tag{F.20}
\end{aligned}$$

where  $C_{NT}^* = \|B\|_2^2 \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2 [(\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} + (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1}] (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1}$  and  $C_{NT}^{**} = C_{NT}^* (\sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^2)^{1/2}$ , the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, the first inequality follows since  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , and the last inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality. Moreover, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{js})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \right)^2 \right] \\
&\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \right)^2 \\
&\leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it, m})] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}]| \right)^2, \tag{F.21}
\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, the second one follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it, m})]$ . By Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(i), (ii) and A.5(ii) and Lemma F.11, we have  $C_{NT}^{**} = O_p(\sqrt{T} \xi_J \sqrt{\log J} / \sqrt{N})$ . Combining this, (F.20) and (F.21) implies that  $E_\varepsilon[\mathcal{T}_2] = O_p(\sqrt{NT} J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J})$  by Assumptions A.5(i) and (iv). Thus, the latter— $\mathcal{T}_2 = O_p(\sqrt{NT} J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J})$ —holds by the Markov's inequality and Lemma F.5. This

proves the first result, and the proofs of other results are similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.9.** *Suppose Assumptions A.2(i), A.4 and A.5(ii) hold. Let  $Q_t \equiv E[\hat{Q}_t]$ . Then*

$$\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|B'Q_t^{-1}\phi(z_{it})\|^2] < \infty \text{ and } \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[|a'Q_t^{-1}\phi(z_{it})|^2] < \infty.$$

PROOF: Since  $\|x\|^2 = \text{tr}(xx')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} E[\|B'Q_t^{-1}\phi(z_{it})\|^2] &= E[\text{tr}(B'Q_t^{-1}\phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'Q_t^{-1}B)] = \text{tr}(B'Q_t^{-1}Q_{it}Q_t^{-1}B) \\ &\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_{it}) \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \right)^{-1} K \|B\|_2^2 \\ &\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_{it}) \left( \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}) \right)^{-1} K \|B\|_2^2, \quad (\text{F.22}) \end{aligned}$$

where the second equality follows by the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, the first inequality follows since  $\text{tr}(B'B) = \|B\|_F^2 \leq K \|B\|_2^2$ , and the second inequality follows since  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ . Thus, the first result of the lemma follows from (F.22), Assumptions A.2(i) and A.5(ii). The proof of the second result is similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.10.** *Under Assumptions A.3(i), A.5(i) and (iv),*

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^4 = O_p(N^2 T J^2).$$

PROOF: The result follows by the Markov's inequality, since

$$\begin{aligned} E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t\|^4 \right] &= E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt}) \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \right)^2 \right] \\ &= E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt}) \phi(z_{kt})' \phi(z_{\ell t}) \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{kt} \varepsilon_{\ell t} \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N E[\phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt}) \phi(z_{kt})' \phi(z_{\ell t})] E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} \varepsilon_{kt} \varepsilon_{\ell t}] \end{aligned}$$



$$\begin{aligned}
&\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}\varepsilon_{kt}\varepsilon_{\ell t}]| \\
&\leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}\varepsilon_{kt}\varepsilon_{\ell t}]| \\
&= O(N^2 T J^2), \tag{F.23}
\end{aligned}$$

where the third equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i), the first inequality is due to the Cauchy Schwartz inequality, the second inequality follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})]$ , and the last equality follows from Assumptions A.5(i) and (iv).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.11.** *Suppose Assumptions A.5(ii) and (iii) hold. Let  $Q_t \equiv E[\hat{Q}_t]$ . Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^2 = O_p\left(\frac{T \xi_J^2 \log J}{N}\right) \text{ and } \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4 = O_p\left(\frac{T \xi_J^4 \log^2 J}{N^2}\right).$$

PROOF: Recall that  $\hat{Q}_t = \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'/N$ . Let  $\eta_1, \dots, \eta_N$  be an i.i.d. sequence of Rademacher variables. It then follows that

$$\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{D}_t &\equiv E[\|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4] \\
&\leq 16E\left[\left\|\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \eta_i \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'\right\|_2^4\right] \\
&\leq 16C \frac{\log^2 JM}{N^2} \sup_z \|\phi(z)\|^4 E\left[\left\|\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \phi(z_{it})\phi(z_{it})'\right\|_2^2\right] \\
&\leq 16M^2 C \frac{\xi_J^4 \log^2 JM}{N^2} E[\|\hat{Q}_t\|_2^2], \tag{F.24}
\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality follows from the independence in Assumption A.5(iii) and the symmetrization lemma (e.g., Lemma 2.3.1 of van der Vaart and Wellner (1996)), the second inequality follows by Lemma F.12 and the fact that  $\phi(z_{it})'\phi(z_{it}) \leq \sup_z \|\phi(z)\|^2$ , the third inequality follows since  $\sup_z \|\phi(z)\|^2 \leq M \sup_z \|\bar{\phi}(z)\|^2 = M \xi_J^2$ . Let  $A = 16M^2 C \xi_J^4 \log^2 JM / N^2$ . Combining  $E[\|\hat{Q}_t\|_2^2] \leq 2\sqrt{\mathcal{D}_t} + 2\|Q_t\|_2^2$  and (F.24) leads to the inequality:  $\mathcal{D}_t \leq 2A(\sqrt{\mathcal{D}_t} + \|Q_t\|_2^2)$ . Solving

the inequality yields

$$E[\|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4] \leq \left( A + \sqrt{A^2 + 2A\|Q_t\|_2^2} \right)^2. \quad (\text{F.25})$$

Thus, by the fact that  $\max_{t \leq T} \|Q_t\|_2 \leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(Q_{it})$  and the Markov's inequality, the second result of the lemma follows from (F.25) and Assumption A.5(ii). The first result of the lemma follows similarly by noting that  $E[\|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^2] \leq (E[\|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^4])^{1/2}$ . This completes the proof of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.12** (Khinchin inequality). *Let  $S_1, \dots, S_N$  be a sequence of symmetric  $k \times k$  matrices and  $\eta_1, \dots, \eta_N$  be an i.i.d. sequence of Rademacher variables. Then for  $k \geq 2$ ,*

$$E_\eta \left[ \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \eta_i S_i \right\|_2^4 \right] \leq C \frac{\log^2 k}{N^2} \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N S_i^2 \right\|_2^2$$

for some constant  $C$ , where  $E_\eta$  denotes the expectation with respect to  $\{\eta_i\}_{i \leq N}$ .

PROOF: This is a modified version of Lemma 6.1 in Belloni et al. (2015). The result is trivial for  $2 \leq k \leq e^6$ . For  $k > e^6$ , we have

$$\begin{aligned} E_\eta \left[ \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \eta_i S_i \right\|_2^4 \right] &\leq E_\eta \left[ \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \eta_i S_i \right\|_{S_{\log k}}^4 \right] \\ &\leq \left( E_\eta \left[ \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \eta_i S_i \right\|_{S_{\log k}}^{\log k} \right] \right)^{4/\log k} \\ &\leq C_0^4 \frac{\log^2 k}{N^2} \left\| \left( \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N S_i^2 \right)^{1/2} \right\|_{S_{\log k}}^4 \leq C_0^4 e^4 \frac{\log^2 k}{N^2} \left\| \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N S_i^2 \right\|_2^2, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.26})$$

where the first inequality follows by (6.44) in Belloni et al. (2015) and  $\|\cdot\|_{S_{\log k}}$  is the Schatten norm, the second inequality follows by the Jensen's inequality, the third inequality follows by (6.45) in Belloni et al. (2015) and  $C_0$  is some positive constant, and the fourth inequality follows by (6.44) in Belloni et al. (2015) again. Thus, the result of the lemma follows by setting  $C = C_0^4 e^4$ .  $\blacksquare$

### F.3 Technical Lemmas for Theorem 3.2

**Lemma F.13.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.5, A.6(i) and (ii) hold. Let  $\tilde{E}$ ,  $D_4$  and  $V$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1, and  $\ell_{NT}$  and  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}$  be given in the proof of Theorem 3.2. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\|\sqrt{NT}D_4\hat{B}V^{-1} - \mathcal{L}_{NT}B'B\mathcal{M}\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{(\kappa-1/2)}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \ell_{NT}\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right),$$

where  $\mathcal{M}$  is a nonrandom matrix given in Lemma F.15.

PROOF: For the first result, we have the following decomposition

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{NT}D_4\hat{B}V^{-1} &= \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}M_TFB'B\mathcal{M} + \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}M_TFB'(\hat{B} - BH)V^{-1} \\ &\quad + \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}M_TFB'B(HV^{-1} - \mathcal{M}) \equiv \mathcal{T}_1 + \mathcal{T}_2 + \mathcal{T}_3.\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.27})$$

Therefore, it suffices to show that  $\|\mathcal{T}_1 - \mathcal{L}_{NT}B'B\mathcal{M}\|_F = O_p(\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J/N^{1/4})$ ,  $\|\mathcal{T}_2\|_F = O_p(J^{(1/2-\kappa)} + J^{3/2}/N + J/\sqrt{NT})$  and  $\|\mathcal{T}_3\|_F = O_p(J^{(1/2-\kappa)} + J^{3/2}/N + J/\sqrt{NT})$ . The first one holds, since

$$\begin{aligned}\|\mathcal{T}_1 - \mathcal{L}_{NT}B'B\mathcal{M}\|_F &\leq \|B\|_2^2\|\mathcal{M}\|_2\left\|\frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}}\sum_{t=1}^T(\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1})\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t f_t'\right\|_F \\ &\quad + \|B\|_2^2\|\mathcal{M}\|_2\|\bar{f}\|\left\|\frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}}\sum_{t=1}^T(\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1})\Phi(Z_t)'\varepsilon_t\right\| \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right),\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.28})$$

where the equality follows from Assumptions A.2(i) and (ii) and Lemma F.16. The latter two follow by a similar argument. The second result also follows by a similar argument as in (F.28). This completes the proof of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.14.** *Suppose Assumptions A.2(ii), A.3(i), (ii), A.5(i)-(iii), A.6(ii) and*

(iii) hold. Let  $\ell_{NT}$  and  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}$  be given in the proof of Theorem 3.2. Then there exists a  $JM \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  such that

$$\|(\ell_{NT}, \mathcal{L}_{NT}) - \mathbb{N}\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}}\right).$$

PROOF: Let  $\zeta_i \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T f_t^\dagger \otimes Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} / \sqrt{NT}$ . Then  $\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}, \mathcal{L}_{NT})) = \sum_{i=1}^N \zeta_i$ . Note that  $E[\zeta_i] = 0$  by Assumptions A.3(i) and (ii) and  $\zeta_1, \dots, \zeta_N$  are independent by Assumptions A.3(i), A.5(iii) and A.6(ii). Moreover,

$$\sum_{i=1}^N E[\|\zeta_i\|^3] \leq \sum_{i=1}^N (E[\|\zeta_i\|^4])^{3/4} = O\left(\frac{J^{3/2}}{\sqrt{N}}\right), \quad (\text{F.29})$$

where the inequality follows by the Liapounov's inequality, and the equality follows from Assumptions A.2(ii), A.5(i), (ii) and A.6(iii) since

$$\begin{aligned} E[\|\zeta_i\|^4] &= \frac{1}{N^2 T^2} E\left[\left(\sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \phi(z_{it})' Q_t^{-1} Q_s^{-1} \phi(z_{is}) f_t^\dagger f_s^\dagger \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}\right)^2\right] \\ &\leq C_{NT} \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \frac{1}{N^2 T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{u=1}^T \sum_{v=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \varepsilon_{iu} \varepsilon_{iv}]| \\ &\leq C_{NT} \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] \frac{J^2 M^2}{N^2 T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{u=1}^T \sum_{v=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \varepsilon_{iu} \varepsilon_{iv}]|, \quad (\text{F.30}) \end{aligned}$$

where  $C_{NT} = \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t^\dagger\|^4 (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-4}$ , the first inequality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i), the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the fact that  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , and the second inequality follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})]$ . In addition,  $\Omega = E[\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}, \mathcal{L}_{NT})) \text{vec}((\ell_{NT}, \mathcal{L}_{NT}))']$ . Thus, Lemma F.17 implies that there is a  $JM \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  such that

$$\|(\mathcal{L}_{NT}, \ell_{NT}) - \mathbb{N}\|_F = \|\text{vec}((\mathcal{L}_{NT}, \ell_{NT})) - \text{vec}(\mathbb{N})\| = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}}\right). \quad (\text{F.31})$$

This completes the proof of the Lemma. ■

**Lemma F.15.** Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.4 and A.6(i) hold. Let  $V$  be given in

the proof of Theorem C.1. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then

$$H = \mathcal{H} + O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}}\right) \text{ and } HV^{-1} = \mathcal{M} + O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}}\right),$$

where  $\mathcal{H} = (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} \Upsilon \mathcal{V}^{-1/2}$ ,  $\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{H} \mathcal{V}^{-1}$ ,  $\mathcal{V}$  is a diagonal matrix of the eigenvalues of  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2}$  and  $\Upsilon$  is the corresponding eigenvector matrix such that  $\Upsilon' \Upsilon = I_K$ .

PROOF: By the definition of  $\hat{B}$ ,  $(\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}'/T) \hat{B} = \hat{B} V$ . Pre-multiply it on both sides by  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B'$  to obtain

$$(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' (\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}'/T) \hat{B} = (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' \hat{B} V. \quad (\text{F.32})$$

To simplify notation, let  $\delta_{NT} \equiv (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' (\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}'/T - B (F'M_T F/T) B') \hat{B}$  and  $R_{NT} \equiv (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' \hat{B}$ . Then we can rewrite (F.32) as

$$[(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} + \delta_{NT} R_{NT}^{-1}] R_{NT} = R_{NT} V. \quad (\text{F.33})$$

Let  $D_{NT}$  be a diagonal matrix consisting the diagonal elements of  $R_{NT}' R_{NT}$ . Denote  $\Upsilon_{NT} \equiv R_{NT} D_{NT}^{-1/2}$ , which has a unit length. Then we can further rewrite (F.33) as

$$[(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} + \delta_{NT} R_{NT}^{-1}] \Upsilon_{NT} = \Upsilon_{NT} V, \quad (\text{F.34})$$

which implies that  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} + \delta_{NT} R_{NT}^{-1}$  has eigenvector matrix  $\Upsilon_{NT}$  and eigenvalue matrix  $V$ . Since  $R_{NT} = (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B H + o_p(1)$  by simple algebra and Theorem C.1,  $R_{NT}^{-1} = O_p(1)$  by Assumptions A.2(i)-(iii) and Lemma F.2. This together with (F.1) and Assumptions A.2(i) and (ii) implies

$$\delta_{NT} R_{NT}^{-1} = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}}\right). \quad (\text{F.35})$$

Since the eigenvalues of  $(F'M_T F/T) B' B$  are equal to those of  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2}$ , the eigenvalues of  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2}$  are distinct

by Assumption A.6(i). By the eigenvector perturbation theory, there exists a unique eigenvector matrix  $\Upsilon$  of  $(F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} B' B (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2}$  such that

$$\Upsilon_{NT} = \Upsilon + O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}} \right). \quad (\text{F.36})$$

By (F.1),  $R'_{NT} R_{NT} = \hat{B}' B (F'M_T F/T) B' \hat{B} = \hat{B}' (\tilde{Y}' M_T \tilde{Y}'/T) \hat{B} + O_p(J^{-\kappa} + J/N + \sqrt{J}/\sqrt{NT}) = V + O_p(J^{-\kappa} + J/N + \sqrt{J}/\sqrt{NT})$ . This implies that

$$D_{NT} = V + O_p \left( \frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{J}{N} + \frac{\sqrt{J}}{\sqrt{NT}} \right). \quad (\text{F.37})$$

Recall that  $H^\diamond = (F'M_T F/T) B' \hat{B} V^{-1}$  given in the proof of Lemma F.2(i). Thus, by (F.36) and (F.37), it follows that  $H^\diamond = (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} R_{NT} V^{-1} = (F'M_T F/T)^{1/2} \Upsilon_{NT} D_{NT}^{1/2} V^{-1} = \mathcal{H} + O_p(J^{-\kappa} + J/N + \sqrt{J}/\sqrt{NT})$ , which together with (F.2) and (F.3) leads to the first result of the lemma. The second result of the lemma follows from (F.2), the first result of the lemma and Lemma F.2(i). ■

**Lemma F.16.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), A.3(i), (ii), A.5 and A.6(ii) hold. Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{J} \xi_J \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right)$$

and

$$\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t \right\| = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{J} \xi_J \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right).$$

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{T} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' / \sqrt{NT}$  and  $E_\varepsilon$  denote the expectation with respect to  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . Since  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} E_\varepsilon[\|\mathcal{T}\|_F^2] &= \frac{1}{NT} E_\varepsilon \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)' \varepsilon_t f_t' f_s' \varepsilon_s' \Phi(Z_s) (\hat{Q}_s^{-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \right) \right] \\ &= \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \phi(z_{it})' (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) (\hat{Q}_s^{-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \phi(z_{js}) f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}] \\ &= \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \phi(z_{it})' (\hat{Q}_t^{-1} - Q_t^{-1}) (\hat{Q}_s^{-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \phi(z_{is}) f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}] \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
&\leq C_{NT}^* \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2 \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \\
&\leq C_{NT}^{**} \frac{1}{NT} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \right)^{1/2}, \quad (\text{F.38})
\end{aligned}$$

where  $C_{NT}^* = (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} [(\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} + (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1}]$   $(\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1} \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2$  and  $C_{NT}^{**} = C_{NT}^* (\sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t - Q_t\|_2^2)^{1/2}$ , the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, the third equality follows by Assumption A.3(ii) and the independence in Assumption A.6(ii), the first inequality follows since  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , and the last inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality. Moreover, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
&E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \right] \\
&\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \\
&\leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2, \quad (\text{F.39})
\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, the second one follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})]$ . By Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), and A.5(ii) and Lemma F.11, we obtain that  $C_{NT}^{**} = O_p(\sqrt{T} \xi_J \sqrt{\log J} / \sqrt{N})$ . Combining this, (F.38) and (F.39) implies that  $E_\varepsilon[\|\mathcal{T}\|_F^2] = O_p(J \xi_J \sqrt{\log J} / \sqrt{N})$  by Assumptions A.5(i) and (iv). Thus, the first result of the lemma follows by the Markov's inequality and Lemma F.5. The proof of the second result is similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.17** (Yurinskii's coupling). *Let  $\zeta_1, \dots, \zeta_N$  be independent random  $k$ -vectors with  $E[\zeta_i] = 0$  for each  $i$  and  $\beta = \sum_{i=1}^N E[\|\zeta_i\|^3]$  finite. Let  $S = \sum_{i=1}^N \zeta_i$ . For each  $\delta > 0$ , there exists a random vector  $\mathbb{S}$  in the same probability space with*

$S$  with a  $N(0, E[SS'])$  distribution such that

$$P\{\|S - \mathbb{S}\| > 3\delta\} \leq C_0 D_0 \left(1 + \frac{|\log(1/D_0)|}{k}\right)$$

for some universal constant  $C_0$ , where  $D_0 = \beta k \delta^{-3}$ .

PROOF: This is the Yurinskii's coupling, see Theorem 10 in Pollard (2002). ■

## F.4 Technical Lemmas for Theorem 4.1

**Lemma F.18.** Let  $D_1^*, D_2^*, D_3^*, D_5^*, D_6^*$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.1.

- (i) Under Assumptions A.2(i), (ii), (iv), A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|D_1^*\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa})$ .
- (ii) Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), (iv), A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|D_2^*\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-4\kappa})$ .
- (iii) Under Assumptions A.1, A.2(ii), (iv), A.3, A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|D_3^*\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa}J/N)$ .
- (iv) Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Under Assumptions A.1-A.5, A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|D_5^* \hat{B}\|_F^2 = O_p(J/N^2)$ .
- (v) Under Assumptions A.1, A.2(ii), (iv), A.3, A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|D_6^*\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa}J/N)$ .

PROOF: (i) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_1^*\|_F \leq \|B\|_2 \|F\|_2 \|\tilde{\Delta}^*\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Assumptions A.2(i), (ii) and Lemma F.21(i).

(ii) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_2^*\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\tilde{\Delta}^*\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(i) and F.21(i).

(iii) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_3^*\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}^*\|_F \|\tilde{E}\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(ii) and F.21(i).

(iv) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_5^* \hat{B}\|_F \leq \|\hat{B}' \tilde{E}\|_F \|\tilde{E}^*\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.7(i) and F.21(ii).

(v) Since  $\|M_T\|_2 = 1$ ,  $\|D_6^*\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\tilde{E}^*\|_F / T$ . The result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(i) and F.21(ii). ■



**Lemma F.19.** Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.5, A.6(i), (ii), A.7(i) and (ii) hold. Let  $V$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1, and  $\tilde{E}^*$ ,  $D_4^*$ ,  $\ell_{NT}^{**}$  and  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**}$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.1. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K+1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then

$$\|\sqrt{NT}D_4^*\hat{B}V^{-1} - \mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**}B'B\mathcal{M}\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{(\kappa-1/2)}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}^*1_T - \ell_{NT}^{**}\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right),$$

where  $\mathcal{M}$  is a nonrandom matrix given in Lemma F.15.

PROOF: For the first result, we have the following decomposition

$$\begin{aligned}\sqrt{NT}D_4^*\hat{B}V^{-1} &= \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}^*M_TFB'B\mathcal{M}_2 + \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}^*M_TFB'(\hat{B} - BH)V^{-1} \\ &\quad + \sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}^*M_TFB'B(HV^{-1} - \mathcal{M}) \equiv \mathcal{T}_1 + \mathcal{T}_2 + \mathcal{T}_3.\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.40})$$

Therefore, it suffices to show that  $\|\mathcal{T}_1 - \mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**}B'B\mathcal{M}_2\|_F = O_p(\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J/N^{1/4})$ ,  $\|\mathcal{T}_2\|_F = O_p(J^{(1/2-\kappa)} + J^{3/2}/N + J/\sqrt{NT})$  and  $\|\mathcal{T}_3\|_F = O_p(J^{(1/2-\kappa)} + J^{3/2}/N + J/\sqrt{NT})$ . The first one holds, since

$$\begin{aligned}\|\mathcal{T}_1 - \mathcal{L}_{NT}^{**}B'B\mathcal{M}\|_F &\leq \|B\|_2^2\|\mathcal{M}\|_2\left\|\frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}}\sum_{t=1}^T(\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1})\Phi(Z_t)^*\varepsilon_t f_t'\right\|_F \\ &\quad + \|B\|_2^2\|\mathcal{M}\|_2\|\bar{f}\|\left\|\frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}}\sum_{t=1}^T(\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1})\Phi(Z_t)^*\varepsilon_t\right\| \\ &= O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J}\log^{1/4}J}{N^{1/4}}\right),\end{aligned}\quad (\text{F.41})$$

where the equality follows from Assumptions A.2(i) and (ii) and Lemma F.23. The latter two follow by a similar argument. The second result also follows by a similar argument as in (F.41). This completes the proof of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.20.** Suppose Assumptions A.2(ii), A.3(i), (ii), A.5(i)-(iii), A.6(ii), (iii), A.7(i) and (iii) hold. Let  $\ell_{NT}^*$  and  $\mathcal{L}_{NT}^*$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.1. Assume  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then there exists a  $JM \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}^*$  with

$\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that

$$\|(\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \mathbb{N}^*\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}}\right).$$

PROOF: Let  $\zeta_i \equiv (w_i - 1) \sum_{t=1}^T f_t^\dagger \otimes Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} / \sqrt{NT}$ . Then  $\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) = \sum_{i=1}^N \zeta_i$ . Let  $E_w$  denote the expectation with respect to  $\{w_i\}_{i \leq N}$ . Then conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$ ,  $E_w[\zeta_i] = 0$  and  $\zeta_1, \dots, \zeta_N$  are independent by Assumption A.7(i). To proceed, let  $\Omega_{NT} \equiv \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T (f_t^\dagger f_s^{\dagger'}) \otimes Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \phi(z_{is})' Q_s^{-1} \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} / NT$ . Then  $E_w[\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) \text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*))'] = \omega_0 \Omega_{NT}$ . We now apply Lemma F.17 to the independent random vectors  $\zeta_1, \dots, \zeta_N$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . There exists a  $JM \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}^{**}$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**}) \sim N(0, \Omega_{NT})$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that the following holds:

$$\|\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| = O_{p^*}\left((J\beta)^{1/3}\right), \quad (\text{F.42})$$

where  $\beta = \sum_{i=1}^N E[\|\zeta_i\|^3]$ . Next, we calculate  $\beta$ . To the end, we first calculate

$$\begin{aligned} E[\|\zeta_i\|^4] &= E[(w_1 - 1)^4] \frac{1}{N^2 T^2} E \left[ \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \phi(z_{it})' Q_t^{-1} Q_s^{-1} \phi(z_{is}) f_t^\dagger f_s^{\dagger'} \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \right)^2 \right] \\ &\leq C_{NT} \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \frac{1}{N^2 T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{u=1}^T \sum_{v=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \varepsilon_{iu} \varepsilon_{iv}]| \\ &\leq C_{NT} \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] \frac{J^2 M^2}{N^2 T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{u=1}^T \sum_{v=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is} \varepsilon_{iu} \varepsilon_{iv}]|, \quad (\text{F.43}) \end{aligned}$$

where  $C_{NT} = E[(w_1 - 1)^4] \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t^\dagger\|^4 (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-4}$ , the first inequality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3(i), the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the fact that  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , and the second one follows by  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})]$ . Thus,

$$\beta = \sum_{i=1}^N E[\|\zeta_i\|^3] \leq \sum_{i=1}^N (E[\|\zeta_i\|^4])^{3/4} = O\left(\frac{J^{3/2}}{\sqrt{N}}\right), \quad (\text{F.44})$$

where the inequality follows by the Liapounov's inequality, and the last equality

follows from (F.43) and Assumptions A.2(ii), A.5(i), (ii), A.6(iii) and A.7(i). We now may combine (F.42), (F.44) and Lemma F.5 to obtain

$$\|\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}}\right). \quad (\text{F.45})$$

By Assumption A.7(iii) and Lemma F.25,  $\Omega_{NT}^{-1/2}$  is well defined with probability approaching one since  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Define  $\mathbb{N}^*$  such that  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) = \Omega^{1/2} \Omega_{NT}^{-1/2} \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})$ . Then  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) \sim N(0, \Omega)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . It follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \|\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \mathbb{N}^*\|_F &\leq \|\text{vec}((\ell_{NT}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT}^*)) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| \\ &+ \sqrt{\omega_0} \|\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) - \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{J^{3/2}}{\sqrt{N}}\right) = O_p\left(\frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.46})$$

where the first equality follows by (F.45) and the fact that  $\|\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^*) - \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| \leq \|\Omega_{NT}^{1/2} - \Omega^{1/2}\|_2 \|\Omega_{NT}^{-1/2} \text{vec}(\mathbb{N}^{**})\| = O_p(J^{3/2}/\sqrt{N})$ , which is due to Lemma F.25. This completes the proof of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.21.** *Let  $\tilde{\Delta}^*$  and  $\tilde{E}^*$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.1.*

- (i) *Under Assumptions A.2(ii), (iv), A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|\tilde{\Delta}^*\|_F^2/T = O_p(J^{-2\kappa})$ .*
- (ii) *Under Assumptions A.1(ii), A.3, A.7(i) and (ii),  $\|\tilde{E}^*\|_F^2/T = O_p(J/N)$ .*

PROOF: (i) By the fact that  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2 \|x\|$  and  $\|A\|_2 \leq \|A\|_F$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T} \|\tilde{\Delta}^*\|_F^2 &= \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\Phi(Z_t)^* \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^* (R(Z_t) + \Delta(Z_t) f_t)\|^2 \\ &\leq 2 \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2 \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*) \right)^{-1} \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N w_i \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \\ &\quad + 2 \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*) \right)^{-1} \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N w_i |r(z_{it})|^2 = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^{2\kappa}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.47})$$

where the last equality follows from Assumptions A.2(ii) and A.7(ii) and Lemma F.22(ii).

(ii) By the fact that  $\|Ax\| \leq \|A\|_2 \|x\|$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{T} \|\tilde{E}^*\|_F^2 &= \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\Phi(Z_t)^* \Phi(Z_t))^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t\|^2 \\ &\leq \left( \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*) \right)^{-2} \frac{1}{N^2 T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t\|^2 = O_p\left(\frac{J}{N}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.48})$$

where the last equality follows from Assumption A.7(ii) and Lemma F.22(i).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.22.** (i) Under Assumptions A.1(ii), A.3 and A.7(i),

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t\|^2 = O_p(NTJ).$$

(ii) Under Assumption A.2(iv) and A.7(i),

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N w_i \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}) \text{ and } \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N w_i |r(z_{it})|^2 = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}).$$

PROOF: (i) The result follows by the Markov's inequality, since

$$\begin{aligned} E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \|\Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t\|^2 \right] &= E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt}) \varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt} w_i w_j \right] \\ &= \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N E[\phi(z_{it})' \phi(z_{jt})] E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}] E[w_i w_j] \\ &\leq E[w_1^2] \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}]| \\ &\leq T J M E[w_1^2] \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})] \max_{t \leq T} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{jt}]| = O(NTJ), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.49})$$

where the second equality follows by the independence in Assumptions A.3(i) and A.7(i), the first inequality is due to the Cauchy Schwartz inequality, the second one follows by  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^2] \leq JM \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^2(z_{it,m})]$ , and the last equality follows from Assumptions A.1(ii), A.3(iii) and A.7(i).

(iii) The first result follows since

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N w_i \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \leq TKM^2 \max_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2 \sum_{i=1}^N w_i = O_p(NTJ^{-2\kappa}), \quad (\text{F.50})$$

where the inequality follows since  $w_i$ 's are positive and  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \leq M^2 K \sup_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2$ , and the equality follows by the law of large numbers and Assumptions A.2(iv) and A.7(i). The proof of the second result is similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.23.** *Suppose Assumptions A.2(ii), A.3(i), (ii), A.5, A.6(ii), A.7(i) and (ii) hold. Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t f_t' \right\|_F = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{J \xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right)$$

and

$$\left\| \frac{1}{\sqrt{NT}} \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t \right\| = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{J \xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right).$$

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{T} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t f_t' / \sqrt{NT}$  and  $E_\varepsilon$  denote the expectation with respect to  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . Since  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} E_\varepsilon[\|\mathcal{T}\|_F^2] &= \frac{1}{NT} E_\varepsilon \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) \Phi(Z_t)^* \varepsilon_t f_t' f_s \varepsilon_s' \Phi(Z_s)^* (\hat{Q}_s^{*-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \right) \right] \\ &= \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T w_i \phi(z_{it})' (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) (\hat{Q}_s^{*-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \phi(z_{js}) w_j f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{js}] \\ &= \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T w_i^2 \phi(z_{it})' (\hat{Q}_t^{*-1} - Q_t^{-1}) (\hat{Q}_s^{*-1} - Q_s^{-1}) \phi(z_{is}) f_t' f_s E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}] \\ &\leq C_{NT}^* \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t^* - Q_t\|_2 w_i^2 \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]| \\ &\leq C_{NT}^{**} \frac{1}{NT} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T w_i^2 \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \right)^{1/2}, \quad (\text{F.51}) \end{aligned}$$

where  $C_{NT}^* = (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*))^{-1} [(\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t^*))^{-1} + (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1}] \times (\min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it}))^{-1} \max_{t \leq T} \|f_t\|^2$  and  $C_{NT}^{**} = C_{NT}^* (\sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t^* - Q_t\|_2^2)^{1/2}$ , the

second equality follows by the independence in Assumptions A.3(i) and A.7(i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, the third equality follows by Assumption A.3(ii) and the independence in Assumption A.6(ii), the first inequality follows since  $\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_t) \geq \min_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(Q_{it})$ , and the last inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality. Moreover, we have

$$\begin{aligned}
& E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T w_i^2 \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{is})\| |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \right] \\
& \leq E[w_1^4] \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2 \\
& \leq J^2 M^2 E[w_1^4] \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] \sum_{t=1}^T \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{s=1}^T |E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{is}]| \right)^2, \quad (\text{F.52})
\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality is by the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality and the independence in Assumption A.7(i), the second one follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \leq J^2 M^2 \max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})]$ . By Assumptions A.2(ii), A.5(ii) and A.7(ii) and Lemma F.24,  $C_{NT}^{**} = O_p(\sqrt{T}\xi_J\sqrt{\log J}/\sqrt{N})$ . Combining this, (F.51) and (F.52) implies that  $E_\varepsilon[\|\mathcal{T}\|_F^2] = O_p(J\xi_J\sqrt{\log J}/\sqrt{N})$  by Assumptions A.5(i), (iv) and A.7(i). Thus, the result of the lemma follows by the Markov's inequality and Lemma F.5. The proof of the second result is similar.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.24.** *Suppose Assumptions A.5(ii), (iii) and A.7(i) hold. Assume  $J \geq 2$  and  $\xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Then*

$$\sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{Q}_t^* - Q_t\|_2^2 = O_p\left(\frac{T\xi_J^2 \log J}{N}\right).$$

PROOF: The proof is similar to the proof of Lemma F.11, thus omitted for brevity.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.25.** *Suppose Assumptions A.2(ii), A.3(i), (ii), A.5(i)-(iii), A.6(ii), (iii) and A.7(iii) hold. Let  $\Omega_{NT}$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.20. Then*

$$\|\Omega_{NT}^{1/2} - \Omega^{1/2}\|_2 = O_p\left(\frac{J}{\sqrt{N}}\right).$$

PROOF: We first show  $\|\Omega_{NT} - \Omega\|_F^2 = O_p(J^2/N)$ . Let  $\zeta_i \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T f_t \otimes Q_t^{-1} \phi(z_{it}) \varepsilon_{it} / \sqrt{NT}$ . Then  $\Omega_{NT} = \sum_{i=1}^N \zeta_i \zeta_i'$  and  $\Omega = \sum_{i=1}^N E[\zeta_i \zeta_i']$ . Since  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} E[\|\Omega_{NT} - \Omega\|_F^2] &= E \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N (\zeta_i \zeta_i' - E[\zeta_i \zeta_i']) (\zeta_j \zeta_j' - E[\zeta_j \zeta_j'])' \right) \right] \\ &= \sum_{i=1}^N \left( E[(\zeta_i' \zeta_i)^2] - \|E[\zeta_i \zeta_i']\|_F^2 \right) \leq N \max_{i \leq N} E[\|\zeta_i\|^4] = O\left(\frac{J^2}{N}\right), \quad (\text{F.53}) \end{aligned}$$

where the second equality follows since  $\zeta_1, \dots, \zeta_N$  are independent by Assumptions A.3(i), A.5(iii) and A.6(ii) and both expectation and trace operators are linear, the inequality follows by the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality since  $\|E[\zeta_i \zeta_i']\|_F^2 \geq 0$ , and the last equality follows from (F.30) and Assumptions A.2(ii), A.5(i), (ii) and A.6(iii). Thus,  $\|\Omega_{NT} - \Omega\|_F^2 = O_p(J^2/N)$  follows from (F.53) by the Markov's inequality. The result of the lemma follows from Assumption A.7(iii) and Lemma A.2 of Belloni et al. (2015).  $\blacksquare$

## F.5 Technical Lemmas for Theorem 4.2

**Lemma F.26.** *Let  $\mathcal{S}_1, \mathcal{S}_2, \mathcal{S}_3, \mathcal{S}_4, \mathcal{S}_5, \mathcal{S}_6$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.2. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  with  $T = o(N)$  or  $T \geq K+1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$  and  $NTJ^{-(2\kappa+1)} = o(1)$ . Assume that  $H_0$  is true.*

- (i) Under Assumption A.2(iv),  $\mathcal{S}_1 = O_p(NTJ^{-(2\kappa+1)})$ .
- (ii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.6, A.8(i)-(iii),  $\mathcal{S}_2 = O_p(\sqrt{NT}J^{-(\kappa+1)})$ .
- (iii) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\mathcal{S}_3 = O_p(\sqrt{NT}J^{-(\kappa+1/2)})$ .
- (iv) Under Assumptions A.1-A.3,  $\mathcal{S}_4 = O_p(NTJ^{-(2\kappa+1)})$ .
- (v) Under Assumptions A.1-A.6, A.8(i)-(iii),  $\mathcal{S}_5 = O_p(\sqrt{NT}J^{-(\kappa+1)})$ .
- (vi) Under Assumptions A.1-A.5,  $\mathcal{S}_6 = O_p(\sqrt{NT}J^{-(\kappa+1/2)})$ .

PROOF: (i) The proof is similar to the proof of (iv).

(ii) The proof is similar to the proof of (v).

(iii) The proof is similar to the proof of (vi).

(iv) It follows that

$$\mathcal{S}_4 \leq \|H\|_2^2 \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^T \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 / J \leq (NT/J) \|H\|_2^2 M^2 K \sup_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2, \quad (\text{F.54})$$

where the second inequality follows by  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \|\delta(z_{it})\|^2 \leq M^2 K \sup_{k \leq K, m \leq M} \sup_z |\delta_{km,J}(z)|^2$ . Thus, the result of the lemma follows from (F.54), Assumption A.2(iv) and Lemma F.2(i).

(v) By Assumption A.8(ii),  $\sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|z_{it}\|^2 / NT = O_p(1)$  by the Markov's inequality. It then follows that

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)' z_{it}\|^2 &\leq \|\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H\|_F^2 \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|z_{it}\|^2 \\ &= O_p \left( \frac{1}{J} + \frac{T}{J^{2\kappa+1}} + \frac{T}{NJ} \right) = O_p \left( \frac{1}{J} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.55})$$

where the first equality follows from Lemma F.27, and the second equality follows since  $T = o(N)$ ,  $NTJ^{-(2\kappa+1)} = o(1)$  and  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality,

$$|\mathcal{S}_5| \leq \mathcal{S}_4^{1/2} \left( \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)' z_{it}\|^2 \right)^{1/2}. \quad (\text{F.56})$$

Thus, the result of the lemma follows from (F.55) and (F.56) and Lemma F.26(iv).

(vi) By the fact that  $\|x\|^2 = \text{tr}(xx')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{B} - BH)' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 &= \frac{N}{J} \sum_{t=1}^T \text{tr} \left( (\hat{B} - BH)' \hat{Q}_t (\hat{B} - BH) \right) \\ &\leq \frac{NT}{J} \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(\hat{Q}_t) \|\hat{B} - BH\|_F^2 = O_p \left( \frac{NT}{J^{2\kappa+1}} + \frac{T}{N} + 1 \right) = O_p(1), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.57})$$

where the second equality follows from Assumption A.1(i) and Theorem 3.1, and the last equality follows since  $T = o(N)$  and  $NTJ^{-(2\kappa+1)} = o(1)$ . By the Cauchy-



Schwartz inequality,

$$|\mathcal{S}_6| \leq \mathcal{S}_4^{1/2} \left( \frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{B} - BH)' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 \right)^{1/2}. \quad (\text{F.58})$$

Thus, the result follows from (F.57) and (F.58) and Lemma F.26(iv).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.27.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.6 and A.8(i)-(iii) hold. Let  $\hat{\gamma}$  and  $\hat{\Gamma}$  be given in Section 4.2. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K+1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Let  $\Omega_z \equiv \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T f_t^\dagger f_s^{\dagger'} \otimes Q_{z,t}^{-1} E[z_{it} z'_{is}] Q_{z,s}^{-1} E[\varepsilon_{it} \varepsilon_{is}] / NT$ , where  $Q_{z,t} = \sum_{i=1}^N E[z_{it} z'_{it}] / N$ . Assume that  $H_0$  is true. Then there exists an  $M \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  such that*

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma) - \mathbb{G}_\gamma\| = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}} \right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H) - \mathbb{G}_\Gamma\|_F = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{T}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{1}{N^{1/6}} \right),$$

where  $\mathbb{G}_\gamma = \mathbb{N}_{z,1} - \mathbb{G}_\Gamma \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f} - \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H}' B' (\mathbb{N}_1 - \mathbb{G}_B \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}) - \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathbb{G}'_B a$ ,  $\mathbb{G}_\Gamma = \mathbb{N}_{z,2} B' B \mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathbb{N}_1$  and  $\mathbb{G}_B$  are given in Theorem 3.2, and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,1}$  and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,2}$  are the first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}_z$ .

PROOF: Let us begin by defining some notation. Let  $\vec{\varepsilon}_t \equiv (Z_t' Z_t)^{-1} Z_t' \varepsilon_t$  and  $\vec{E} \equiv (\vec{\varepsilon}_1, \dots, \vec{\varepsilon}_T)$ . Then (9) under  $H_0$  can be written as

$$\vec{Y} = \gamma 1_T' + \Gamma F' + \vec{E}, \quad (\text{F.59})$$

where  $1_T$  denotes a  $T \times 1$  vector of ones. Recall  $M_T = I_T - 1_T 1_T' / T$ . Post-multiplying (F.59) by  $M_T$  to remove  $\gamma$ , we thus obtain

$$\vec{Y} M_T = \Gamma (M_T F)' + \vec{E} M_T. \quad (\text{F.60})$$

Recall that  $V$  is a  $K \times K$  diagonal matrix of the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of

$\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T$  as defined in the proof of Theorem C.1,  $H = F'M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F}/T = V$  as showed in the proof of Theorem C.1. By the definition of  $\hat{\Gamma}$ ,  $\hat{\Gamma} = \tilde{Y}M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$ . We may substitute (F.60) to  $\hat{\Gamma} = \tilde{Y}M_T\hat{F}(\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F})^{-1}$  to obtain

$$\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H = (\vec{E}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)\hat{B}V^{-1} = \sum_{j=1}^3 \mathcal{D}_j \hat{B}V^{-1}, \quad (\text{F.61})$$

where in the first equality we have used  $\hat{F}'M_T\hat{F}/T = V$  and  $\hat{F} = \tilde{Y}'\hat{B}$ , in the second equality we have substituted (34) into the equation, and  $\mathcal{D}_1 = \vec{E}M_T F B'/T$ ,  $\mathcal{D}_2 = \vec{E}M_T \tilde{E}'/T$  and  $\mathcal{D}_3 = \vec{E}M_T \tilde{\Delta}'/T$ . We can conduct the same exercise as in (40) to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H) - \sqrt{NT}\mathcal{D}_1\hat{B}V^{-1}\|_F \\ & \leq \sqrt{NT}\|V^{-1}\|_2(\|\mathcal{D}_2\hat{B}\|_F + \|\mathcal{D}_3\|_F\|\hat{B}\|_2) = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{T}}{\sqrt{N}}\right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.62})$$

where the equality follows by Lemmas F.2(i) and F.33. Thus, the second result of the lemma follows from (F.62) and Lemma F.34. We now show the first result of the lemma. By the definition of  $\hat{\gamma}$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{\gamma} - \gamma &= \vec{E}1_T/T + (\Gamma H - \hat{\Gamma})H^{-1}\bar{f} - \hat{\Gamma}(\hat{B} - BH)'a \\ &\quad - \hat{\Gamma}\hat{B}'(BH - \hat{B})H^{-1}\bar{f} - \hat{\Gamma}\hat{B}'\tilde{E}1_T/T - \hat{\Gamma}\hat{B}'\tilde{\Delta}1_T/T, \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.63})$$

where  $H^{-1}$  is well defined with probability approaching one by (C.1) and Lemma F.2(ii), and we have used  $a'B = 0$  and  $\hat{B}'\hat{B} = I_K$ . By a similar argument as in (42)-(44),

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\gamma} - \gamma) - [\sqrt{N/T}\vec{E}1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma} - \Gamma H)\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f}] \\ & \quad + \Gamma\mathcal{H}\mathcal{H}'B'[\sqrt{N/T}\tilde{E}1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)\mathcal{H}^{-1}\bar{f}] \\ & \quad + \Gamma\mathcal{H}\sqrt{NT}(\hat{B} - BH)'a\| = O_p\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J}{\sqrt{NT}}\right). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.64})$$

Thus, the first result of the lemma follows from (F.64), Lemmas F.34, F.13 and

F.14, Theorem 3.2 and the second result of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.28.** *Suppose Assumptions A.5(i), (iii) and A.8(ii) hold. Let  $\hat{\mathcal{Q}}$  and  $\mathcal{Q}$  be given in the proof of Theorem 4.2. Then*

$$\|\hat{\mathcal{Q}} - \mathcal{Q}\|_F^2 = O_p\left(\frac{J^2}{N}\right).$$

PROOF: Let  $\hat{\mathcal{Q}}_t \equiv \sum_{i=1}^N (z'_{it}, \phi(z_{it}))'(z'_{it}, \phi(z_{it}))'/N$  and  $\mathcal{Q}_t \equiv E[\hat{\mathcal{Q}}_t]$ . Then  $\hat{\mathcal{Q}} = \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{\mathcal{Q}}_t/T$  and  $\mathcal{Q} = \sum_{t=1}^T \mathcal{Q}_t/T$ . It follows that  $E[\|\hat{\mathcal{Q}}_t - \mathcal{Q}_t\|_F^2] \leq [((J+1)M)^2/N] (\max_{m \leq M, j \leq J, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi_j^4(z_{it,m})] + \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|z_{it}\|^4])$  by the independence in Assumption A.5(iii). By the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality,

$$E[\|\hat{\mathcal{Q}} - \mathcal{Q}\|_F^2] \leq \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T E[\|\hat{\mathcal{Q}}_t - \mathcal{Q}_t\|_F^2] = O\left(\frac{J^2}{N}\right), \quad (\text{F.65})$$

where the equality follows from Assumptions A.5(i) and A.8(ii). By the Markov's inequality, the result of the lemma thus follows from (F.65).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.29.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.6, A.7 and A.8(ii)-(iv) hold. Let  $\hat{\gamma}$ ,  $\hat{\Gamma}$ ,  $\hat{\gamma}^*$  and  $\hat{\Gamma}^*$  be given in Section 4.2. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K+1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Assume that  $H_0$  is true. Then there exists an  $M \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z^*$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z^*) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that*

$$\|\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma}) - \mathbb{G}_\gamma^*\| = O_{p^*}\left(\frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J^{5/6}}{N^{1/6}} + \frac{\sqrt{J\xi_J} \log^{1/4} J}{N^{1/4}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{NT/\omega_0}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma}) - \mathbb{G}_\Gamma^*\|_F = O_{p^*}\left(\frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{T}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right),$$

where  $\Omega_z$  is given in Lemma F.27,  $\mathbb{G}_\gamma^* = \mathbb{N}_{z,1}^* - \mathbb{G}_\Gamma^* \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f} - \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H}' B' (\mathbb{N}_1^* - \mathbb{G}_B^* \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}) - \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathbb{G}_B^{*'} a$ ,  $\mathbb{G}_\Gamma^* = \mathbb{N}_{z,2}^* B' B \mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathbb{N}_1^*$  and  $\mathbb{G}_B^*$  are given in Theorem 4.1, and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,1}^*$  and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,2}^*$  are the first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}_z^*$ .

PROOF: Let us begin by defining some notation. Let  $\varepsilon_t^* \equiv (Z_t^{*'} Z_t)^{-1} Z_t^{*'} \varepsilon_t$  and

$\vec{E}^* \equiv (\vec{\varepsilon}_1^*, \dots, \vec{\varepsilon}_T^*)$ . Then under  $H_0$ , we have

$$\vec{Y}^* = \gamma 1'_T + \Gamma F' + \vec{E}^*. \quad (\text{F.66})$$

where  $1_T$  denotes a  $T \times 1$  vector of ones. Recall  $M_T = I_T - 1_T 1'_T / T$ . Post-multiplying (F.66) by  $M_T$  to remove  $\gamma$ , we thus obtain

$$\vec{Y}^* M_T = \Gamma (M_T F)' + \vec{E}^* M_T. \quad (\text{F.67})$$

Recall that  $V$  is a  $K \times K$  diagonal matrix of the first  $K$  largest eigenvalues of  $\tilde{Y} M_T \tilde{Y}' / T$  as defined in the proof of Theorem C.1,  $H = F' M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$  and  $\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F} / T = V$  as showed in the proof of Theorem C.1. By the definitions of  $\hat{\Gamma}^*$ ,  $\hat{\Gamma}^* = \vec{Y}^* M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$ . We may substitute (F.67) to  $\hat{\Gamma}^* = \vec{Y}^* M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$  to obtain

$$\hat{\Gamma}^* - \Gamma H = (\vec{E}^* M_T \tilde{Y}' / T) \hat{B} V^{-1} = \sum_{j=1}^3 \mathcal{D}_j^* \hat{B} V^{-1}, \quad (\text{F.68})$$

where in the first equality we have used  $\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F} / T = V$  and  $\hat{F} = \tilde{Y}' \hat{B}$ , in the second equality follows we have substituted (34) into the equation, and  $\mathcal{D}_1^* = \vec{E}^* M_T F B' / T$ ,  $\mathcal{D}_2^* = \vec{E}^* M_T \tilde{E}' / T$  and  $\mathcal{D}_3^* = \vec{E}^* M_T \tilde{\Delta}' / T$ . We can conduct the same exercise as in (40) to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \Gamma H) - \sqrt{NT}\mathcal{D}_1^* \hat{B} V^{-1}\|_F \\ & \leq \sqrt{NT} \|V^{-1}\|_2 (\|\mathcal{D}_2^* \hat{B}\|_F + \|\mathcal{D}_3^*\|_F \|\hat{B}\|_2) = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{T}}{\sqrt{N}} \right), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.69})$$

where the equality follows by Lemmas F.2(i) and F.35. By the fact that  $\|C + D\|_F \leq \|C\|_F + \|D\|_F$ , we may combine (F.62) and (F.69) to obtain

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma}) - \sqrt{NT}(\mathcal{D}_1^* - \mathcal{D}_1) \hat{B} V^{-1}\|_F = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{T}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{T}}{\sqrt{N}} \right). \quad (\text{F.70})$$

Thus, the second result of the lemma follows from (F.70) and Lemmas F.5 and

**F.36.** We now show the first result of the lemma. By the definition of  $\hat{\gamma}^*$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}\hat{\gamma}^* - \gamma &= \vec{E}^* 1_T / T + (\Gamma H - \hat{\Gamma}^*) H^{-1} \bar{f} - \hat{\Gamma}^* (\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} (\hat{B}^* - BH)' a \\ &\quad - \hat{\Gamma}^* (\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} \hat{B}^{*'} (BH - \hat{B}^*) H^{-1} \bar{f} - \hat{\Gamma}^* (\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} \hat{B}^{*'} \tilde{E}^* 1_T / T \\ &\quad - \hat{\Gamma}^* (\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} \hat{B}^{*'} \tilde{\Delta}^* 1_T / T,\end{aligned}\tag{F.71}$$

where  $H^{-1}$  is well defined with probability approaching one by (C.1) and Lemma F.2(ii), and we have used  $a'B = 0$  and  $(\hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^*)^{-1} \hat{B}^{*'} \hat{B}^* = I_K$ . By a similar argument as in (42)-(44),

$$\begin{aligned}\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\gamma}^* - \gamma) - [\sqrt{N/T} \vec{E}^* 1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \Gamma H) \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}] \\ + \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H}' B' [\sqrt{N/T} \tilde{E}^* 1_T - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH) \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}] \\ + \Gamma \mathcal{H} \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - BH)' a\| = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J}{\sqrt{NT}} \right).\end{aligned}\tag{F.72}$$

By the fact that  $\|x + y\| \leq \|x\| + \|y\|$ , we may combine (F.64) and (F.72) to obtain

$$\begin{aligned}\|\sqrt{NT}(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma}) - [\sqrt{N/T}(\vec{E}^* 1_T - \vec{E} 1_T) - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma}) \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}] \\ + \Gamma \mathcal{H} \mathcal{H}' B' [\sqrt{N/T}(\tilde{E}^* 1_T - \tilde{E} 1_T) - \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B}) \mathcal{H}^{-1} \bar{f}] \\ + \Gamma \mathcal{H} \sqrt{NT}(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})' a\| = O_p \left( \frac{\sqrt{NT}}{J^\kappa} + \frac{\sqrt{TJ}}{\sqrt{N}} + \frac{J}{\sqrt{NT}} \right).\end{aligned}\tag{F.73}$$

Thus, the first result of the lemma follows from (F.73), Lemma F.36, F.13, F.19 and F.20, Theorem 4.1 and the second result of the lemma.  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.30.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.4 hold. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then*

$$\frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\beta}(z_{it}) - H' \beta(z_{it})\|^2 = o_p(1).$$

**PROOF:** Since  $\hat{\beta}(z_{it}) = \hat{B}' \phi(z_{it})$  and  $\beta(z_{it}) = B' \phi(z_{it}) + \delta(z_{it})$ ,

$$\frac{1}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\beta}(z_{it}) - H' \beta(z_{it})\|^2 \leq \frac{2}{J} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{B} - BH)' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 + 2\mathcal{S}_4,\tag{F.74}$$

where  $\mathcal{S}_4 = \sum_{i=1}^T \sum_{t=1}^N \|H' \delta(z_{it})\|^2 / J$  as defined in the proof of Theorem 4.2. Note that (F.57) and Lemma F.26(iv) continue to hold under  $H_1$ . Thus, the result of the lemma follows from (F.57) and Lemma F.26(iv).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.31.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.4, A.5(iii), A.8(i), (ii) and (v) hold. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Assume that  $H_1$  is true. Then there exists positive constant  $c_0$  such that*

$$\frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\Gamma}' z_{it} - H' \beta(z_{it})\|^2 \geq c_0 + o_p(1).$$

PROOF: Let us begin by defining some notation. Let  $\vec{A}_t \equiv (Z_t' Z_t)^{-1} Z_t' A_t$  for  $A_t = Y_t, \Psi_t, \varepsilon_t$ , where  $\Psi_t = (\alpha(z_{1t}) + \beta(z_{1t})' f_t, \dots, \alpha(z_{Nt}) + \beta(z_{Nt})' f_t)'$ . Let  $\vec{Y} \equiv (\vec{Y}_1, \dots, \vec{Y}_T)$ ,  $\vec{\Psi} \equiv (\vec{\Psi}_1, \dots, \vec{\Psi}_T)$  and  $\vec{E} \equiv (\vec{\varepsilon}_1, \dots, \vec{\varepsilon}_T)$ . Then  $\hat{\Gamma} = (\vec{\Psi} + \vec{E}) M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$ . It is easy to show that  $\hat{\Gamma} = (\vec{\Psi} M_T F / T) (F' M_T F / T)^{-1} H + o_p(1)$  by Theorem C.1, and  $\|(\vec{\Psi} M_T F / T) (F' M_T F / T)^{-1}\|_F \leq C^*$  for some  $C^*$  with probability approaching one. This together with Lemma F.2(ii) implies that  $P(\|\hat{\Gamma} H^{-1}\|_F > C) = o(1)$ . Therefore, under  $H_1$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\hat{\Gamma}' z_{it} - H' \beta(z_{it})\|^2 &\geq \lambda_{\min}(H' H) \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma} H^{-1})' z_{it} - \beta(z_{it})\|^2 \\ &= \lambda_{\min}(H' H) \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T E \left[ \|\beta(z_{it}) - (\hat{\Gamma} H^{-1})' z_{it}\|^2 \right] + o_p(1) \\ &\geq \lambda_{\min}(H' H) \inf_{i \leq N, t \leq T} \inf_{\Pi} E[\|\beta(z_{it}) - \Pi' z_{it}\|^2] + o_p(1) \\ &\geq c_0 + o_p(1) \text{ for some } c_0 > 0, \end{aligned} \tag{F.75}$$

where the equality follows from Lemma F.37 since  $P(\|\hat{\Gamma} H^{-1}\|_F > C) = o(1)$ , and the last inequality follows by Lemma F.2(ii).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.32.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.4, A.5(iii), A.8 hold. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then*

$$\frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{\gamma}^* - \hat{\gamma})' z_{it}|^2 + \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T |(\hat{a}^* - \hat{a})' \phi(z_{it})|^2 = o_p(1)$$

and

$$\frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma})' z_{it}\|^2 + \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{B}^* - \hat{B})' \phi(z_{it})\|^2 = o_p(1).$$

PROOF: We prove the second result, and the proof of the first result is similar. Note that (F.57) continue to hold under  $H_1$ , so the second term on the left-hand side of the second result is  $o_p(1)$ . For the first term, we have

$$\frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|(\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma})' z_{it}\|^2 \leq \|\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma}\|_F^2 \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|z_{it}\|^2. \quad (\text{F.76})$$

Let us define some notation. Let  $\vec{A}_t^* \equiv (Z_t^{*'} Z_t)^{-1} Z_t^{*'} A_t$  for  $A_t = Y_t, \Psi_t, \varepsilon_t$ , where  $\Psi_t = (\alpha(z_{1t}) + \beta(z_{1t})' f_t, \dots, \alpha(z_{Nt}) + \beta(z_{Nt})' f_t)'$ . Let  $\vec{Y}^* \equiv (\vec{Y}_1^*, \dots, \vec{Y}_T^*)$ ,  $\vec{\Psi}^* \equiv (\vec{\Psi}_1^*, \dots, \vec{\Psi}_T^*)$  and  $\vec{E}^* \equiv (\vec{\varepsilon}_1^*, \dots, \vec{\varepsilon}_T^*)$ . Then  $\hat{\Gamma}^* = (\vec{\Psi}^* + \vec{E}^*) M_T \hat{F} (\hat{F}' M_T \hat{F})^{-1}$ . It is easy to show that  $\hat{\Gamma}^* = (\vec{\Psi}^* M_T F/T)(F' M_T F/T)^{-1} H + o_p(1)$  by Theorem C.1. From the proof of Lemma F.31,  $\hat{\Gamma} = (\vec{\Psi} M_T F/T)(F' M_T F/T)^{-1} H + o_p(1)$ . Moreover, it can be easily shown that  $(\vec{\Psi}^* - \vec{\Psi}) M_T F/T = o_p(1)$ . Thus,

$$\hat{\Gamma}^* - \hat{\Gamma} = (\vec{\Psi}^* - \vec{\Psi}) F/T (F' F/T)^{-1} = o_p(1). \quad (\text{F.77})$$

By Assumption A.8(ii),  $\sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|z_{it}\|^2 / NT = O_p(1)$  by the Markov's inequality. This together with (F.76) and (F.77) implies that the first term is also  $o_p(1)$ . ■

**Lemma F.33.** *Let  $\mathcal{D}_2$  and  $\mathcal{D}_3$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.27.*

(i) *Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Under Assumptions A.1-A.5, A.8(i) and (ii),  $\|\mathcal{D}_2 \hat{B}\|_F^2 = O_p(1/N^2)$ .*

(ii) *Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), (iv), A.3, A.8(i) and (ii),  $\|\mathcal{D}_3\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa}/N)$ .*

PROOF: (i) By Assumptions A.3, A.8(i) and (ii), we may follow a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.3(ii) to obtain  $\|\vec{E}\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$ . Since  $\|\mathcal{D}_2 \hat{B}\|_F \leq \|\hat{B}' \vec{E}\|_F \|\vec{E}\|_F/T$ , the result then follows from Lemmas F.7(i).

(ii) Note that  $\|\vec{E}\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$  from the proof of (i). Since  $\|\mathcal{D}_3\|_F \leq$

$\|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\vec{E}\|_F / T$ , the result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(i).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.34.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3, A.5(iii), (iv), A.6, A.8(i)-(iii) hold. Let  $V$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1,  $\mathcal{D}_1$  and  $\vec{E}$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.27. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then there exists an  $M \times (K + 1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  such that*

$$\|\sqrt{NT}\mathcal{D}_1\hat{B}V^{-1} - \mathbb{G}_\Gamma\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T}\vec{E}1_T - \mathbb{N}_{z,1}\| = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right),$$

where  $\Omega_z$  is given in Lemma F.27,  $\mathbb{G}_\Gamma = \mathbb{N}_{z,2}B'BM$ ,  $\mathcal{M}$  is a nonrandom matrix in Lemma F.15, and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,1}$  and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,2}$  are first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}_z$ .

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT,z} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1} Z_t' \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' / \sqrt{NT}$  and  $\ell_{NT,z} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1} Z_t' \varepsilon_t / \sqrt{NT}$ . By a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.13,

$$\|\sqrt{NT}\mathcal{D}_1\hat{B}V^{-1} - \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}B'BM\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{1}{N^{1/4}}\right) \quad (\text{F.78})$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T}\vec{E}1_T - \ell_{NT,z}\| = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/4}}\right). \quad (\text{F.79})$$

By a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.14, there exists an  $M \times (K + 1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  such that

$$\|(\ell_{NT,z}, \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}) - \mathbb{N}_z\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right). \quad (\text{F.80})$$

Thus the result of the lemma follows from (F.78)-(F.80).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.35.** *Let  $\mathcal{D}_2^*$  and  $\mathcal{D}_3^*$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.29.*

*(i) Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J^2 \xi_J^2 \log J = o(N)$ . Under Assumptions A.1-A.5, A.7(i), A.8(ii) and (iv),*



$$\|\mathcal{D}_2^* \hat{B}\|_F^2 = O_p(1/N^2).$$

(ii) Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), (iv), A.3, A.7(i), A.8(ii) and (iv),  $\|\mathcal{D}_3^*\|_F^2 = O_p(J^{-2\kappa}/N)$ .

PROOF: (i) By Assumptions A.3, A.7(i), A.8 (ii) and (iv), we may follow a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.21(ii) to obtain  $\|\vec{E}^*\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$ . Since  $\|\mathcal{D}_2^* \hat{B}\|_F \leq \|\hat{B}' \tilde{E}\|_F \|\vec{E}^*\|_F/T$ , the result then follows from Lemmas F.7(i).

(ii) Note that  $\|\vec{E}^*\|_F^2/T = O_p(1/N)$  from the proof of (i). Since  $\|\mathcal{D}_3^*\|_F \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F \|\vec{E}^*\|_F/T$ , the result then immediately follows from Lemmas F.3(i).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.36.** Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3, A.5(iii), (iv), A.6, A.7(i) and A.8(ii)-(iv) hold. Let  $V$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1,  $\mathcal{D}_1$  and  $\vec{E}$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.27, and  $\mathcal{D}_1^*$  and  $\vec{E}^*$  be given in the proof of Lemma F.29. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K+1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then there exists an  $M \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z^*$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z^*) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that

$$\|\sqrt{NT}(\mathcal{D}_1^* - \mathcal{D}_1) \hat{B} V^{-1} - \sqrt{\omega_0} \mathbb{G}_\Gamma^*\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right)$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T}(\vec{E}^* 1_T - \vec{E} 1_T) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \mathbb{N}_{z,1}^*\| = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right),$$

where  $\Omega_z$  is given in Lemma F.27,  $\mathbb{G}_\Gamma^* = \mathbb{N}_{z,2}^* B' B \mathcal{M}$ ,  $\mathcal{M}$  is a nonrandom matrix in Lemma F.15, and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,1}^*$  and  $\mathbb{N}_{z,2}^*$  are first column and the last  $K$  columns of  $\mathbb{N}_z^*$ .

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT,z}^{**} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1} Z_t^{*'} \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' / \sqrt{NT}$  and  $\ell_{NT,z}^{**} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1} Z_t^{*'} \varepsilon_t / \sqrt{NT}$ . By a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.19,

$$\|\sqrt{NT} \mathcal{D}_1^* \hat{B} V^{-1} - \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}^{**} B' B \mathcal{M}\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{J^\kappa} + \frac{1}{N^{1/4}}\right) \quad (\text{F.81})$$

and

$$\|\sqrt{N/T} \vec{E}^* 1_T - \ell_{NT,z}^{**}\| = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/4}}\right). \quad (\text{F.82})$$

Let  $\mathcal{L}_{NT,z}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1}(Z_t^* - Z_t)' \varepsilon_t (f_t - \bar{f})' / \sqrt{NT} = \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}^{**} - \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}$  and  $\ell_{NT,z}^* \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T Q_{t,z}^{-1}(Z_t^* - Z_t)' \varepsilon_t / \sqrt{NT} = \ell_{NT,z}^{**} - \ell_{NT,z}$ . By a similar argument as in the proof of Lemma F.20, there exists an  $M \times (K+1)$  random matrix  $\mathbb{N}_z^*$  with  $\text{vec}(\mathbb{N}_z^*) \sim N(0, \Omega_z)$  conditional on  $\{Y_t, Z_t\}_{t \leq T}$  such that

$$\|(\ell_{NT,z}^*, \mathcal{L}_{NT,z}^*) - \sqrt{\omega_0} \mathbb{N}_z^*\|_F = O_p\left(\frac{1}{N^{1/6}}\right). \quad (\text{F.83})$$

Thus, the result of the lemma follows from (F.78), (F.79) and (F.81)-(F.83).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.37.** *Suppose Assumptions A.5(iii), A.8(ii) and (v) hold. For any given positive constant  $C$ ,*

$$\sup_{\|\Pi\|_F \leq C} \left| \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T \|\beta(z_{it}) - \Pi' z_{it}\|^2 - \frac{1}{NT} \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{t=1}^T E[\|\beta(z_{it}) - \Pi' z_{it}\|^2] \right| = o_p(1).$$

PROOF: Let  $\mathcal{A}_C \equiv \{\Pi \in \mathbf{R}^{M \times K}, \|\Pi\|_F \leq C\}$  for  $C > 0$ , and  $\mathcal{F}_C \equiv \{\zeta(\cdot, \Pi) : \zeta(z_1, \dots, z_T, \Pi) = \sum_{t=1}^T \|\beta(z_t) - \Pi' z_t\|^2 / T \text{ for } \Pi \in \mathcal{A}_C\}$  be a class of functions  $\zeta(\cdot, \Pi)$  indexed by  $\Pi \in \mathcal{A}_C$ . We aim to show  $\sup_{\Pi \in \mathcal{A}_C} |\frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N \zeta(z_{i1}, \dots, z_{iT}, \Pi) - \frac{1}{N} \sum_{i=1}^N E[\zeta(z_{i1}, \dots, z_{iT}, \Pi)]| = o_p(1)$ . It follows that for any  $\Pi_1, \Pi_2 \in \mathcal{A}_C$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} & |\zeta(z_1, \dots, z_T, \Pi_1) - \zeta(z_1, \dots, z_T, \Pi_2)| \\ & \leq \|\Pi_1 - \Pi_2\|_F \frac{1}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T \|z_t\| (\|\beta(z_t) - \Pi_1' z_t\| + \|\beta(z_t) - \Pi_2' z_t\|) \\ & \leq \|\Pi_1 - \Pi_2\|_F \frac{2}{T} \sum_{t=1}^T (\|z_t\| \|\beta(z_t)\| + C \|z_t\|^2) \equiv \|\Pi_1 - \Pi_2\|_F G(z_1, \dots, z_T). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.84})$$

By Assumptions A.8(ii) and (v),  $\max_{i \leq N} E[G(z_{i1}, \dots, z_{iT})] < \infty$ . This together with (F.84) implies that  $\mathcal{F}_C$  is a class of functions that are Lipschitz in the index  $\Pi \in \mathcal{A}_C$  with envelop function  $G$ . Since  $\mathcal{A}_C$  is compact, for every  $\epsilon > 0$ , the covering number  $N(\epsilon, \mathcal{A}_C, \|\cdot\|_F)$  of  $\mathcal{A}_C$  with respect to  $\|\cdot\|_F$  is bounded. By Theorem 2.7.11 of van der Vaart and Wellner (1996), for every  $\epsilon > 0$ , the bracketing number  $N_{[]}(\epsilon, \mathcal{F}_C, L_1(P))$  of  $\mathcal{F}_C$  with respect to  $L_1(P)$  is bounded. Thus, the result of the lemma follows by the Glivenko-Cantelli theorem (e.g., Theorem 2.4.1 of van der Vaart and Wellner (1996)).  $\blacksquare$

## F.6 Technical Lemmas for Theorem 5.1

**Lemma F.38.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1-A.3 hold. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$  or  $T \geq K + 1$  is finite; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\sqrt{N})$ . Then there exist positive constants  $c_1$  and  $c_2$  such that*

$$c_1 + o_p(1) \leq \lambda_K(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \leq \lambda_1(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \leq c_2 + o_p(1).$$

PROOF: By (F.2),  $\lambda_k(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) = \lambda_k((F'M_TF/T)B'B) + o_p(1)$  for  $k = 1, \dots, K$ . Thus, the result immediately follows from Assumptions A.2(i)-(iii).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.39.** *Suppose Assumptions A.1(i), A.2(ii), (iv), A.3(i), A.5(i) and A.9 hold. Assume (i)  $N \rightarrow \infty$ ; (ii)  $T \rightarrow \infty$ ; (iii)  $J \rightarrow \infty$  with  $J = o(\min\{\sqrt{N}, \sqrt{T}\})$  and  $J^{-2\kappa}N = o(1)$ . Then there exist positive constants  $c_3$  and  $c_4$  such that*

$$c_3 + o_p(1) \leq N\lambda_{JM-K-1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \leq N\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \leq c_4 + o_p(1).$$

PROOF: For a matrix  $A$ , let  $\sigma_k(A)$  denote the  $k$ th largest singular value of  $A$ . Noting that  $\lambda_k(AA') = \sigma_k^2(A)$ , it follows that for  $k = 1, \dots, JM - K$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} & |\lambda_{K+k}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}') - \lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})')| \\ & \leq |\sigma_{K+k}(\tilde{Y}M_T) - \sigma_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T)|^2 + 2|\sigma_{K+k}(\tilde{Y}M_T) \\ & \quad - \sigma_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T)|\sigma_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T) \\ & \leq \|\tilde{Y}M_T - (BF' + \tilde{E})M_T\|_F^2 + 2\|\tilde{Y}M_T - (BF' + \tilde{E})M_T\|_F \\ & \quad \times \lambda_{K+k}^{1/2}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})') \\ & \leq \|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F^2 + 2\|\tilde{\Delta}\|_F\lambda_{K+1}^{1/2}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'), \end{aligned} \tag{F.85}$$

where the first inequality is due to the triangle inequality, the second inequality follows by the Weyl's inequality, and the third inequality follows from (34) and the fact that  $\lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})') \leq \lambda_{K+1}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})')$  for  $k \geq 1$ . We next show that the right-hand side of (F.85) is asymptotically negligible and study the behavior of  $\lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})')$ . Let  $\tilde{B} = B + \tilde{E}M_TF(F'M_TF)^{-1}$  and  $M_F = I_T - M_TF(F'M_TF)^{-1}(M_TF)'$ . We may decompose

$(BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'$  by

$$(BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})' = \tilde{B}F'M_TF\tilde{B}' + \tilde{E}M_TM_FM_T\tilde{E}'. \quad (\text{F.86})$$

Then, (F.86) implies that for  $k = 1, \dots, JM - K$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})') &\leq \lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{B}F'M_TF\tilde{B}') \\ &\quad + \lambda_k(\tilde{E}M_TM_FM_T\tilde{E}') \leq \lambda_k(\tilde{E}M_T\tilde{E}') \leq \lambda_k(\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.87})$$

where the first inequality follows by Lemma F.40(i), the second inequality follows by Lemma F.40(ii) and the fact that the rank of  $\tilde{B}F'M_TF\tilde{B}'$  is not greater than  $K$  and  $I - M_F$  is positive semi-definite, and the third inequality follows since  $I - M_T$  is positive semi-definite. Moreover, (F.86) also implies that for  $k = 1, \dots, JM - 2K - 1$ ,

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})') &\geq \lambda_{K+k}(\tilde{E}M_TM_FM_T\tilde{E}') \\ &= \lambda_{K+k}(\tilde{E}\tilde{M}_TM_FM_T\tilde{E}') + \lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{E}M_T(I - M_F)M_T\tilde{E}') \geq \lambda_{2K+k}(\tilde{E}M_T\tilde{E}') \\ &= \lambda_{2K+k}(\tilde{E}M_T\tilde{E}') + \lambda_2(\tilde{E}(I_T - M_T)\tilde{E}') \geq \lambda_{2K+k+1}(\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'), \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.88})$$

where the first inequality follows by Lemma F.40(ii), the first equality follows since the rank of  $\tilde{E}M_T(I - M_F)M_T\tilde{E}'$  is not greater than  $K$ , the second inequality follows by Lemma F.40(i), and the second equality and the third inequality follow similarly. Putting (F.87) and (F.88) together implies that eigenvalues of  $(BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'$  are bounded by those of  $\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'$ . Thus, we may study the behavior of the eigenvalues of  $\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'$ . Recall that  $\mathcal{A}_{NT} = \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t'] \Phi(Z_t) \hat{Q}_t^{-1} / NT$  in Lemma F.41. By the Weyl's inequality and Lemma F.41,

$$\sup_{k \leq JM} |\lambda_k(N\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'/T) - \lambda_k(\mathcal{A}_{NT})| \leq \|N\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'/T - \mathcal{A}_{NT}\|_F = o_p(1). \quad (\text{F.89})$$

This implies that the eigenvalues of  $N\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'/T$  and  $\mathcal{A}_{NT}$  are asymptotically equivalent. Then, it follows from (F.87) and (F.89) that

$$\lambda_{K+1}(N(BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'/T)$$

$$\leq \lambda_1(N\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'/T) \leq \lambda_1(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) + o_p(1) = O_p(1), \quad (\text{F.90})$$

because  $\lambda_1(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) \leq (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t']) = O_p(1)$  by Assumptions A.1(i) and A.9 (i). Combining (F.85), (F.90) and Lemma F.3(i) yields

$$\sup_{k \leq JM-K} |N\lambda_{K+k}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) - N\lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'/T)| = o_p(1). \quad (\text{F.91})$$

This means that  $N\lambda_{K+k}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T)$  and  $N\lambda_{K+k}((BF' + \tilde{E})M_T(BF' + \tilde{E})'/T)$  are asymptotically equivalent. By the triangle inequality, it follows from (F.87)-(F.89) and (F.91) that

$$\begin{aligned} \lambda_{JM}(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) + o_p(1) &\leq N\lambda_{JM-K-1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \\ &\leq N\lambda_{K+1}(\tilde{Y}M_T\tilde{Y}'/T) \leq \lambda_1(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) + o_p(1). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{F.92})$$

Since  $\lambda_1(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) \leq (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} \max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t'])$  and  $\lambda_{JM}(\mathcal{A}_{NT}) \geq (\max_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\max}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} \min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t'])$ , the result of the lemma then follows from (F.92), Assumptions A.1(i) and A.9(i).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.40** (Weyl's inequalities). *Let  $C$  and  $D$  be  $k \times k$  symmetric matrices.*

(i) *For every  $i, j \geq 1$  and  $i + j - 1 \leq k$ ,*

$$\lambda_{i+j-1}(C + D) \leq \lambda_i(C) + \lambda_j(D).$$

(ii) *If  $D$  is positive semi-definite, for all  $1 \leq i \leq k$ ,*

$$\lambda_i(C + D) \geq \lambda_i(C).$$

PROOF: The results can be found in Section III.2 of Bhatia (1997). Also, see the appendices of Ahn and Horenstein (2013) and Fan et al. (2016).  $\blacksquare$

**Lemma F.41.** *Let  $\mathcal{A}_{NT} \equiv \sum_{t=1}^T \hat{Q}_t^{-1} \Phi(Z_t)' E[\varepsilon_t \varepsilon_t'] \Phi(Z_t) \hat{Q}_t^{-1} / NT$  and  $\tilde{E}$  be given in the proof of Theorem C.1. Under Assumptions A.1(i), A.3(i), A.5(i) and A.9(ii),*

$$\|N\tilde{E}\tilde{E}'/T - \mathcal{A}_{NT}\|_F^2 = O_p\left(\frac{J^2}{N} + \frac{J^2}{T}\right).$$

PROOF: Let  $E_\varepsilon$  denote the expectation with respect to  $\{\varepsilon_t\}_{t \leq T}$ . To simplify the notation, let  $\hat{\psi}_{it} \equiv \phi(z_{it})\hat{Q}_t^{-1}$  and  $\nu_{ijt} \equiv \varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt} - E[\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}]$ . Since  $\|A\|_F^2 = \text{tr}(AA')$ ,

$$\begin{aligned}
E_\varepsilon[\|\bar{E}\bar{E}'/NT - \mathcal{A}_{NT}\|_F^2] &= \frac{1}{N^2T^2} E_\varepsilon \left[ \text{tr} \left( \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N \hat{\psi}_{it} \hat{\psi}_{jt}' \nu_{ijt} \nu_{k\ell s} \hat{\psi}_{\ell s} \hat{\psi}_{ks}' \right) \right] \\
&= \frac{1}{N^2T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N \hat{\psi}_{it}' \hat{\psi}_{ks} \hat{\psi}_{jt}' \hat{\psi}_{\ell s} \text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s}) \\
&= (\min_{t \leq T} \lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-4} \frac{1}{N^2T^2} \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{jt})\| \|\phi(z_{ks})\| \|\phi(z_{\ell s})\| \\
&\quad \times |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s})|, \tag{F.93}
\end{aligned}$$

where the second equality follows by the independence in Assumption A.3 (i) and the fact that both expectation and trace operators are linear, and the inequality follows since  $\|\hat{\psi}_{it}\| \leq (\lambda_{\min}(\hat{Q}_t))^{-1} \|\phi(z_{it})\|$ . Moreover,

$$\begin{aligned}
&E \left[ \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N \|\phi(z_{it})\| \|\phi(z_{jt})\| \|\phi(z_{ks})\| \|\phi(z_{\ell s})\| |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s})| \right] \\
&\leq \max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s})| \\
&\leq J^2 M^2 \max_{\ell \leq JM, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi^4(z_{it,m})] \sum_{t=1}^T \sum_{s=1}^T \sum_{i=1}^N \sum_{j=1}^N \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{\ell=1}^N |\text{cov}(\varepsilon_{it}\varepsilon_{jt}, \varepsilon_{ks}\varepsilon_{\ell s})|, \tag{F.94}
\end{aligned}$$

where the first inequality is due to the Cauchy-Schwartz inequality, and the second one follows since  $\max_{i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\|\phi(z_{it})\|^4] = J^2 M^2 \max_{\ell \leq JM, i \leq N, t \leq T} E[\phi^4(z_{it,m})]$ . Combining (F.93) and (F.94) implies that  $E_\varepsilon[\|\bar{E}\bar{E}'/NT - \mathcal{A}_{NT}\|_F^2] = O_p(J^2/N + J^2/T)$  by Assumptions A.1(i), A.5(i) and A.9(ii). Thus, the result of the lemma follows by the Markov's inequality and Lemma F.5.  $\blacksquare$

## References

- AHN, S. AND A. HORENSTEIN (2013): “Eigenvalue Ratio Test for the Number of Factors,” *Econometrica*, 81, 1203–1227.
- BELLONI, A., V. CHERNOZHUKOV, D. CHETVERIKOV, AND K. KATO (2015): “Some New Asymptotic Theory for Least Squares Series: Pointwise and Uniform Results,” *Journal of Econometrics*, 186, 345–366.
- BHATIA, R. (1997): *Matrix Analysis*, Graduate Texts in Mathematics, Springer.
- FAN, J., Y. LIAO, AND W. WANG (2016): “Supplement to “Projected principal component analysis in factor models”,” *DOI:10.1214/15-AOS1364SUPP*.
- POLLARD, D. (2002): *A User’s Guide to Measure Theoretic Probability*, vol. 8 of *Cambridge Series in Statistical and Probabilistic Mathematics*, Cambridge University Press.
- VAN DER VAART, A. W. AND J. A. WELLNER (1996): *Weak Convergence and Empirical Processes: With Applications to Statistics*, Springer Series in Statistics, New York: Springer, 1st edition ed.